

XZiï SCchS fciY ULLch LiXhch giMcS XciKiSi

EC LiXhch EBd giMcS LiXhch, gMcS bjLhc (A:)
CXcm WhMid EA XZiï SCchS fciYc UIB Wæc LiX-
hchz Aèh XhFc GhL FjUcSi Zdm dmGh EC LiX-
hchc bhMm Aèh chäjd AdhbiWm ShW XDUh Fch
AfchYkd bGdjFhSc (ftiïic fmch MhS) HmLm WiMc
XciKD MhBc FcLpWz ShW WiMc bjWfh-bcMi,
ShW GiAd-Gjfi, FjW Fhb Fcdm ShBW Gjfi Ac FjW
Fhbm ShBW ZmMhc EBW, Ac ShW ZUh EFdcm
ShBW FS bhDA FcpW, WhYcbhW EFdcm SCZh
Fchc FS Zmfi fjMjH ÜmBW, EC LiXhchc bhMm BSh
MhWh MhDz

gMcS BLh Ad-bLic MWbc EWjbhW 1400 ZLc
AHm EC LiXhch dmGh EDz

B LiXhchc bhMm Aèhc WZi gMcS bjLhc (A:)
BSighf ALmz ShW MWb EBd Fidh, ShBW Fidh
gjcj ThFi Ze EBdh, FmbWm UmfhØci EBdh, ZiA-
fhUi Fcdh, Ac FjW ghdSm Aèh bhZjUc UiUhc-UcfW
XhBdh ESh MhWh MhDz

bjLhc (A:) MbhWhc 400 ZLc AHm, bifcc ZhUfh
DF YochCWm gMcS BCLjYcm (A:) GjZ bhDA FcSh,
BCLjYc ZhZh gMcS BAFjZc (A:) ZjfVc ZWi BLchB-
dcmE GjZ bhDA FcShz bifci EFdm Dchcm ZWi
BLchBd Wh FBA, BZchWi FBA QhFiShz BZchWi
fäc bhWi EBd, ciYkMi Zh ZpSdz BCLjY (A:) bhch
MhEAc ZhUm, AcF YochCW bifcc ZhUfh EBA
ZWi BLchBdc CXcm GjZ Mjc-Mjddb FciA Shchcm
Hjdhb ZhWhBd, EBdm AèhD gMcS bjLhcm (A:)

ZmMidh ZWi BLchBdcm AMhU Fchc dhHi, Ac ShBW Shchcm YochCWc Hjdhibi ThFi AMhU Fcdhz

Aèh XhFm gMcS bjLhc (A:) HmLm ZWi BLchBd MhSi Ac Shbhb AUb MhSic dhHi AèhB fciEsc KicFhdiW UfOh gjFjb MhWhBdhz EC gjFjb gÀd WZi, cLjd, XmHhæcm bhWLpWz Dc FjWj cU-ZUD WhBz

EC LiXhchS UmGh MhD, AèhD gMcS bjLhcm gjFjb Uidh, Aèhc dhHi ShBW DGhW XZiï Ic ZhWhBSH, EC Icc WFFhE AèhD ShWcm UmGhBdhz EC Icc aiScm ALid XZiï gmcmb fciY, bhWfm B Iccm XZiï bidW-Shæj FBA QhFiShz BGhW Ebd gC Abdc FhZh fciY, Aîh UIWiAc gFd bjbiWc FiZdhz EBdm ZWi BLchBd MhSi EC fbD bjLhYicc dhGhW MhHhD MhHhD HiA cBSh, DcdhHi EC DZhUS-GhWhcm Shchc dHm Fci ZBA WiShz gMcS bjLhc (A:) gjFjb bhYiF ZWi BLchBdm EC Ic ZhWhBdhz

DchhMm ALm:

(F) AèhD ZWi BLchBdcm AMhU Fcdh *1:1-15:21*

ADAS

(G) bcjajbiS ZWi BLchBdc LYc *15:22-18:27 ADAS*

(H) bhZjUc dHm ShW ZÜhc bidWc CLièh *19-24*
cjFj

(I) Aèhc XZiï Ic ZhWhWic gjFjb *25-31 cjFj*

(K) Aèhc ZicjÐm ZWi BLchBdc WhYcbhWi *32-34*
cjFj

(L) Aèhc XZiï Ic ZhWhWi *35-40 cjFj*

AèhD ZWi BLchBdcm AMhU Fcdh

(1:1-15:21)

ZWi BLchBdc CXcm Mjdjb

¹ AèhD gMcS BAFjZc WDA Whb UiLdh BLchBd, DcdhHi ShW Zjfc Whb Ebd ZWi BLchBdz BAFjZm

ShW ZiZi-ZhBóh Ac XciZhcc gFdcM dBA bife UmfE
 HmdhHiz EC fbD ShW dHm EBA Mmch Hmdh,
 Dchc Whb EBd, ² cjZmW, fibiEW, dmZi, DgjUh,
³ BLhGc, fZjdW, ZiW-BAbiW, ⁴ UhW, Wßhdi, LhUl
 Ac Aficz ⁵ BAFjZc ZJfc gFdShD bidiA fíBc MW
 ALdhz Ac BCLjY AH ThFiC bifcE ThFShz ⁶ ZhUm
 BCLjY, ShW ahBApW, Ac gi Abdc gFd bhch Hmdhz
⁷ EBdm Shchc ZhUc ZJfVc ZheiA GjZ ZdAdh EBdhz
 Dch KhBcEZhd LiíiA Aîh bife Umf aciHmdhz

⁸ DcbhMm bifcE DFMW WDA ZhUfh EBdh, DBW
 BCLjYcm KiWpW Whz ⁹ DBW WiMc XtMh EFdcM
 FBdh, “KhBA UmGE, ZWi BLchBd EFd Abch ThFi
 ZmfiE Ac ZdAdhEz ¹⁰ Sm AE, Abch DF YÛi Fci,
 BSh MmWj Ac Wh ZhepWz AcWhD Shch ZheiA
 gmfm MjĐc FhdE Abchc UlfbWc dHm bidiA Abchc
 ZicjĐm MjĐ FcZ, ZhUm Abchc Umf ThFi MhBZHiz”

¹¹ SmC Shch fcUhc dhHhBdh Dchem bhciA-VciA
 Mjc-Mjdb FciA Fhb FchWic dhHiz Dch YochCWc
 Yfd chGhc dhHi XiTjb Ac chbhfmf Whbc UlBOh
 OhCWE ZhWhBdhz ¹² EBdm Dchc CXcm MS Zmfi
 Mjc-Mjdb Fch EBd, DchE ES Zmfi Zheidh Ac
 Liíidhz DcdhHi bifci EFdm ZWi BLchBdcM GjZ
 QchB Hmdhz ¹³ QchBA DchemUi AcE FPiW Fhb
 FchBdhz ¹⁴ bhOi Fhb, BOc Fhb Ac GmSc bhMm Fic
 Fhb FchBA Dchc MhWcm Siíh ZhWhBdidz Ac Shch
 Mjc-Mjdb FciA WiíkC-XhfhWc dhGhW Fhb FchBSz

¹⁵ ZhUm bifcc ZhUfhD fiYth Ac YkA Whbc
 ULBMW BZchWi UhB ZmOicM gjFjb Uidh, ¹⁶ “Sjbch
 BZchWi ZmOiØc UhB HiciS HiA, BShc XjApW
 XDUh EBdmC bhcidhBE, Ghdi XjeiØcm MiSh
 chGiEz” ¹⁷ EBdm gi UhB ZmOiØm Aèhcm QchBSh
 HSiFm, bifci ZhUfhc gjFjb Wh bhWiA XjApØcmE
 MiSh chGSz ¹⁸ SmC ZhUfhD Dchem WiA MiFhBdh,

“BSh Fhb FmWm FcdhD? XjApØcm FmWm MiSh chGdhD?”

¹⁹ Shch MjAX Uidh, “BZchWi ZmOiW bifci ZmOiØc dhGhW WhD, Shch ZCS ZdAdhz UhB Shchc FhLhS MhBZhc AHmC Shchc gjcjÍh XDUh EBMhDz” ²⁰⁻²¹ EC UlBE ZmOiD Aèhcm QchBSh Fci, AèhD cgbS FciA ShchcmE AEdhU Uidhz Ac ZWi BLchBdE AcE Zmfi Fci ZheiA GjZ fÃibhw EBdhz ²² BSh UmGiA YochCWm WiMc XtMh EFdcm gjFjb Uidh, “BZchWi EFdc FjWj XjApW EBdmC Sjbch Wid WUE YhdhB UiE, Ghdi XjeiØcm MiSh chGiEz”

2

gMcS bjLhc (A:) MWb

¹ DcbhMm dmZi Hjlic DFMW bhWfm, ShW WiMc Hjlic DF FBÛhcm fhUi Fedhz ² EC FBÛhc Ice DF XjAc MWb EBdz XjAHj UmGSm GjZ fjÛc EAD, SiW bhf Vci djFhB chGdhz ³ gmfm Ac djFhBSh Wh XhciA, ShBW Wd-GhHehc DF OjFci dBdhz EC OjFciS bhOia Smd Ac AdFhSch dmXiA EHjc aiScm gjcjÍhcm ghchBA, HhJHc Kcc Wd ZWc bhMm TBA ABdhz ⁴ Ac Dc FiSh Ufh ED UmGhc dhHi, Shc ZBW UlcB CZhBdz

⁵ Tjeh ZhUm YochCWc Xjei HhJHE WhEAS ABdhz HhJHc XhcE ShW ZhÛi EFd IjchIjciS ALidz ShBW Kcc Wd-GhHehc bhMm EC OjFci UmGiA, ShW ZhÛicm FBdh, “EC OjFciHj AWz” ⁶ OjFciC Qhdh GjdiA UmGdh, Dc aiScm DF XjAD FhÛmcz UmGiA ShW bhDA dhHiHmdz ShBW FBdh, “Bf, BHj S FjWj BZchWic XjAz”

⁷ EC fbD XjAc ZBW ABA YochCWc Xjeicm MiFhBd, “chWi bh, B gjcjÍhcm UlV GhEAWic

dhHi FjWj BZchWi ZmOicm XhBdm AXWhc
 HmLm AWhb Wi?” ⁸ YochCWc XjeiD FBdh,
 “Mh AWHiz” SmC XjeiD HiA XjAc bh’cm dBA
 ABdz ⁹ YochCWc XjeiD ShWcm FBdh, “EH, Abi
 Sjbhc ZmSW UibjWm, Sjbi Abhc EBA EC XjAHjcm
 ZjFc UlV GhEAEz” EC gi ZmOiD WiA gjcjlhcm UlV
 GhEABA Xhdidhz ¹⁰ XjAHj FiLj Ze EAc ZhUm
 ShBW WiA YochCWc Xjeic HmLm UidhBdhz
 YochCWc XjeiD DWcm WiMc XjA ZhWhB Xhdidhz
 ShBW FBdh, “Abi Shcm XhWi ThFi OhWiA SjdLiz”
 DcdhHi Shc Whb chGdh bjLh [bhWi, OhWiA
 Sjd]z

gMcS bjLh (A:) bific Umf ThFi ahHiHmdh

¹¹ gmfm bjLh Ze EBHmdm DFUiW ShW WiMc
 MhSic ahBApØc HmLm HiA UmGdh, Shch GjZ Fìc
 Fhb Fecz DcbhMm UmGdh, ShW WiMc BZchWi
 MhSic DF ZmOhcm, DF bifciD bhBc-VBc Fcmcz
¹² UmGiA KhBcEZhD KhBA Ac FjWj bhWjf Wh
 UmGhD, ShBW gC bifcicm GjW FciA Zhdjc Sdm
 Hheièhz ¹³ ZhUc UiWE ShBW gicZhc Zhcm Hmdhz
 HiA UmGdh, UlBMW BZchWiD WiMm WiMm
 bhch-bhci Fcmcz EC ShBW Ulfi MWcm FBdh, “EZh,
 Sjbhc ahBcm FmWm bhchD?” ¹⁴ gm Fpd, “Sjb-
 hcm FmHiD Abhc ghFib ZhWhBA ZiKhc FchS
 XhPhBd? FhBd Mmdh gC bifcicm GjW FcL, ECdh
 AbhcmE GjW FcidShD KhBchD Wi?” EC bjLhD
 QchB Hmdhz ShBW ZjMdh BSh S MhWh-MhWi
 EBHmLmz

¹⁵ Ac YochCWmE BSh gjWiA bjLhcm bhcidSh
 KhBdhz EC fbD bjLh YochCWc HmL ThFi ahHiH-
 mdhz ahHiA bhUiAW UmfE ZfS Fchc dhHi AB-
 dhz ABA gWc DF FjAc FhLhS ZBdhz ¹⁶ bhUiAW
 UmfE fjABZ Whbc DF Bbhb LhZ ALdhz ShW

fhSMW XjeiW ALpWz EC XjeiØm FjAc Xhce ABA,
 Shchc ZhYc LhHd-bmehcm XhWi GhEABZhc dhHi
 Hhbdh achS dhHdhz ¹⁷ EC fbD EBÛ chGhd EFdm
 Shchcm GmUhBA UidhBdz EBdm bjLh CZhBA
 Shchcm fhBÌ Fcdh, Ac Shchc Xhdcm XhWi GhE-
 ABdhz ¹⁸ Shch Shchc ZhYc Vhce HiA ghcdm ShBW
 MiFhBdh, “Sjbch ABM ES MdUi FmbWm AB-
 dhD?” ¹⁹ Shch FBdh, “DF bifci ZmOhD Abchcm
 chGhd EFdc AS ThFi ZhKhBLpWz DBW Abchc
 LhHd-bmehcm XhWi SjdiA GhEABLpWz” ²⁰ SmC
 ShBW MiFhBdh, “B bhWjfHj FjAB? Sjbch Shcm
 TBA ABèhD FmWm? Dcm QhFiA AWiA GhWh
 GhEAEz” ²¹ DcZhUm bjLhD EC Bbhbc ZheiS cBSm
 chMi EBdhz Bbhb LhZm ShW Xjei LYkchcm bjLhc
 dHm fhUi Uidhz ²² ZhUm LYkchc IcE DF XjA
 EBdm bjLhD FBdh, “Abi S ZpSd ZWiA ZiUmfe
 cBchbz” DcdhHi EC XjAc Whb chGdh MhcLjb
 [bhWi, ZpSd]z

²³ ZCS UiW ZhUm bifcc ZhUfh bciHmdhz ZWi
 BLchBdm Hjdhbic dhHi FhSc EBA FhÛh-FhOi Fcdz
 Shchc FhÛW Aèhc HmLm FZjd EBHmdz ²⁴ AèhD
 Shchc YciAU gjWdhz ShBW BZthgib, BLghF Ac
 BAFjZc dHm ShW EAUhc FTh BAU Fcdhz ²⁵ Ac ZWi
 BLchBdc ZhD bjG YichBdh, UDAc WMcm Shchc
 ZhD KhBdhz

3

Sjc XheE gMcS bjLhD (A:) Aèhc UiUhc XhBdh

¹ bjLhD ShW gCc bhUiAWi Bbhb LhZ fjABZc
 LhHd-bmeh chGShz DFUiW ShW LhHdc Xhd dBA
 bcjajbic gmf HhdhS Aèhc Xhe Sjcc FhLhS Hmdhz
² gWE DF MJdhc bhMm bhZjÛc YiciîhD AHjWic
 dhGhW Wjcc bhM ThFi ShWcm UmGh Uidhz

bjLhD UmGdh, Mjdhc bhMm AHjBW Mdmc ETK
 Mjdh Mdmc Whz ³ EC ShBW ShBìjz EBA FBdh,
 “Mjdh Mm Mdmc Wh Dc FhcW FiSh? Sm AcE
 FhLhS HiA UmGi KhBWz”

⁴ bhZjUm MmZdh UmGdh DBW UmGhc dhHi
 FhLhS MhBchHi, EC fbD ShBW Mjdhc bhM ThFi
 QhFiA FBdh, “bjLh, E bjLh!” bjLhD FBdh, “ECWj
 Abiz” ⁵ AèhD FBdh, “Ac LhbWm AHjABE Whz
 Sjbhc XhE ThFi MjSh GjdidhEz MhWE Wi, Sjbi
 EGW Mm MhHhS CZhBL BGhW XhF MhHhz
⁶ gjWE, Abi Sjbhc ZhYc Aèh, BZthgibc Aèh, BLghFc
 Aèh Ac BAFjZc Aèhz” BGhW gjWiAC bjLhD ShW
 bjG djFhBèhz Aèhc ZhD KhBSm ShW Uide Qc ghb-
 hBHmdz

⁷ bhZjUm YcbhBdh, “Abi bific UmfE Abhc Z`Uh
 EFdc UìG-ḅLìZS UmGiAcz bifci fcUhc EFdc dhHi
 Shhc Fh`Uw gjWiAcz Shhc UìG-Fì gFdSh Abi
 UmGLiz ⁸ UmGiA bifci EFdc Mjddb ThFi Shhc
 ZhKhBShb Fci Abi WiMm dhbiA ABLiz Sm Abi
 Shhc bifci ThFi gchBA WibjHiz WiA cfhBd Mbic
 ZCS Ze fj`Uc DF Umf Uibjz BGhW UìV Ac bCc
 ah×hc Adh Umfz EC Umf EBd EGWFjc FmWhWi,
 giOOi, Abjci, YhciMi, giäi Ac MiZjMi EFdc Umfz
⁹ ZWi BLchBdc YciAU Abhc UcZhcE ABLm, bifci
 EFdm Shhc Mmdh LhShBch, BSh Abi UmGiAcz
¹⁰ DcdhHi Abi Sjbhc YochCWc HmLm XhPhBAcz
 Sjbi MhE, HiA Abhc Z`Uh ZWi BLchBdc bifci ThFi
 Zhc FciA AWEz”

¹¹ bjLhD MjAX Uidh, “Abi AcF MW Fm, MmBW
 YochCWc LhbWm HiA bifci Umf ThFi Shhc
 gchBShb Xhcbj?”

¹² AèhD FBdh, “Abi S Sjbhc dHm dHm cBbjz
 Sjbi bifci ThFi bhWfcm gchBA AWiA, Shhc dBA

EC XheE Abhc DZhUS FcZhDz SmC ZjMZhD AbiC Sjbhcm XhPhBLiz”

¹³ bjLhD AcM Fcdh, “UmGCÀh, Abi MmZdh ZWi BLchBdcm HiA FBbj, Sjbchc ZhY-UhUhc AèhD Abhcm ZmMiLpW, EC fbD Shch MjUi MiFhBW ShW Whb FiSh, Sm Shchcm FiSh MjAX UiShb?”

¹⁴ AèhD FBdh, “Abi MmBW ALi, ALiCz ZWi BLchBdcm ECdh FBE, MmW Whb ‘Abi ALi’ ShBW Abhcm Sjbchc HmLm ZmMiLpWz ¹⁵ Sjbi HiA Shchcm FBE, ‘bhZjU’ MmBW gc-ghbmfh ALpW, DBW Sjbchc ZhY-UhUhc Aèh, BZthgibc Aèh, BLghF Ac BAFjZc Aèh, DBWC Abhcm Sjbchc HmLm ZmMiLpWz Abhc gc-ghbmfhFjc Whb ‘bhZjU, MmBW ALpW’z MjHm MjHm, Xjcjfm Xjcjfm EC Whb FhBb cBZz ¹⁶ Sjbi MhE, HiA ZWi BLchBdc bjcäi EFdcm DGhWE Udh FciA FE, bhZjU, MmBW Shchc ZhY-UhUhc Aèh, BZthgibc Aèh, BLghF Ac BAFjZc Aèh, ShBW Sjbhcm UiUhc UiA FBLpW, Abi Sjbchc ZhD GiAd FcLi, Sjbchc CXcc Mjdb-bLiZS UmGLi, bifce Sjbchc ZhD MmSh Fch Ec DESh GiAd FcLiz ¹⁷ BSh UmGiA Abi FBac, Abi bifcc Hjdhibi ThFi Sjbchcm ZhKhBA FmWhWi, giOOi, Abjci, YhciMi, giäi Ac MiZjMi EFdc UlV Ac bCc ah×hc Adh UmfE WibjHiz

¹⁸ “BLchBdc bjcäi EFdm Sjbhc FTh gjWZh, Sjbi Shchcm dHm dBA bifcc ZhUfhc HmLm MhBEz HiA FBE, ‘bhZjU, MmBW BZchWi EFdc Aèh, ShBW Abhcm UcfW UiLpWz DedhHi Abch ShW Whbm DGhW FjczhWi FcShb KhBac, Abch bcjajbic ZhD SiW UiWc XT HiA FjczhWi Uibj, Sm Abchcm MhEac EWjbSi UmCÀhz’ ¹⁹ EBdm Abi MhWi bifcc ZhUfhD Sjbchcm MhBSm UiS WhD, Mjc-MZcUi FcdmE UiS WhDz ²⁰ SmC Abi Abhc FjUcSi AS dhH-

hBbj Ac ECdh AKhWF HMZ WhMid Fcbj, MhSm gm Sjbchcm MhBSm UmDz ²¹ Ac Abi bifci EFdc Uidc bhMm ZWi BLchBdc ZhD DbW DF UDAc ahZ XDUh FchBbj, Dch MhWj bifc ThFi Ghdi ASm Wh MhBWz ²² gFd BLchBdi ZmOiØm Shchc Aci-Yci Zh Mmchc ZheiS Shch cpW, ECdh bifci ZmOiØc HmL ThFi Shchc fjWh-cjXhc HDWh-HhOi Ac ahdh FhXe-KjXe GjMiA WiEz ESh UiA Sjbchc XjA-XjeiWcmE ghMhBE, EC WbjWhD Sjbch bifciØc VW-LhbhWh UGd FcZhDz”

4

gMcS bjLhD (A:) FmchbSi-bhMmMh XhBdh

¹ bjLhD MjAX Uidh, “bhZjU, Shch MjUi Abhcm DFiW Wh FcpW, Abhc bhS Wh gjWpW Zh Shch MjUi FpW, bhZjUm Sjbhcm UcfW UiLpW Wh, Sm Abi FiSh FcShb?” ² EC bhZjUm ShWm MiFhBdh, “Sjbhc ASE BHj FiSh?” ShBW FBdh, “DHj dh-Piz” ³ bhZjUm FBdh, “EFOh bhOiS YhdhEz” bjLhD dhPicm bhOiS YhdhSmC BOh ghY EBHmdz ghY UmGiAC ShBW YhdUi gcdhz ⁴ bhZjUm ShWm gjFjb Fcdh, “AS ZhehBA EHjc dmÕE VcEz” Ac ShBW Vchc dHm dHm EHj gicZhc dhPi EBHmdz ⁵ ZhUm bhZjUm FBdh, “SjbiE ECdh FciE, SmC Shch ghLhC DFiW FcZh Shchc ZhY-UhUhBØc Aèh, BZthgibc Aèh, BLghF Ac BAFjZc AèhD Sjbhcm UcfW UiLpWz”

⁶ bhZjUm gicZhc FBdh, “Sjbhc AS Sjbhc KhÐcc Sdm ghchEz” ShBW AS ghchBdh, Ac Zhc Fchc ZhUmC ShW AS Fjí-vdzmUh Zmbhcm UIvc dhGhW Vdh EBHmdz ⁷ bhZjUm FBdh, “Sjbhc AS gicZhc

gWE ghchEz” ShBW ghchBdh Ac KhĐcc Sd ThFi
Zhc FciA UmGpW, AHc dhGhW ahdh EBHmLmz

⁸ bhZjUm FBdh, “Shch MjUi Sjbhcm DFiW Wh
FcpW, Sm Sjbhc dhPicm ghY EA UmGdm DFiW
FcZh, Ac DEOhD DFiW Wh Fcdm Sjbhc ASc Zmb-
hcc FmchbSi UmGdm Shch DFiW FcZhz ⁹ Ac MjUi
B UlBE FmchbSiDE DFiW Wh FcpW, Sjbhc FTh Wh
bhWpW, Sm Sjbi Wid WU ThFi Tjeh XhWi AWiA
gjFWh bhOiS YhdhBE, UmGZhd bhOiS XeiAC B
XhWi dC EBMiZz”

¹⁰ EC bjLhD bhZjUcm FBdh, “E bhdiF, Abi S ahdh
Fci bhS-FThC bhSShb Xhci Wh, AHmE XhcShb Wh
Ac AXWm B Hjdhbc dHm ZhSKiS Fchc ZhUmE
Xhci Wh, Abhc S MiYch ZhekAz” ¹¹ bhZjUm FBdh,
“bhWfc bjG Fm ZhWhBLm, Abi WhD Wi? Fm
bhWfcm ZjZh, GhdjA Zh AÙh ZhWhBW? KCGm
UmGhc dhHi KGjc XhEAc Fm UmBW? BSh S Abi
bhZjUmC UmB Wh Wi? ¹² Sm Sjbi MhE, HiA FiSh
bhSiShD Abi giFhBA Uibjz Sjbhc bjGc MZhWcm
Abi fhBÌ Fcbjz”

¹³ ShBW FBdh, “E bhdiF, Abi biWS FciAc,
EBÛ FmCccm XhPhB UmCÀhz” ¹⁴ EC bjLhc CXcm
bhZjUc HJLh CPdz ShBW FBdh, “Sjbhc ahB ghcjW
ZiW dmZi ALm Wh Wi? Abi MhWi, gm ahdh ZÇish
UiS Xhemz gm EGW Sjbhc dHm UmGh FchS Ac,
Sjbhcm UmGiA gm GjZ Gjfi EBZz ¹⁵ Sjbi giFhBA UiE
Ac FBE gm FiSh bhSiSz Abi Sjbch UlBEMWc bjGc
MZhWcm fhBÌ Fcbjz Ac gWE HiA FiSh FcShD Abi
giFhBA Uibjz ¹⁶ Sjbhc ahB ghcjWc bjG EBZ Sjbhc
bjG, gm Sjbhc EBA bhWfc dHm bhSiZz XmHhæc
EFdm Mmdh Aèhc Fhdhb FpW, ghcjWm ECdh

Sjbhc Zjdi FBZz ¹⁷ EC dhPi Sjbhc ASE chGiE, BOh UiA gC FmchbSi-bhMmMh EFd MhBc FcZhDz”

¹⁸⁻¹⁹ bhUiAW Umfe ThFSmC bhZjUm bjLhcm gjFjb FcLdh, “Sjbi bifce MhEHi, FhcW bifcc MmSh bhWfm Sjbhcm GjW FcSh KhBLdh, BSh EGW bciHmLpWz” SmC bjLhD ShW gCc fjABZc FhLhS HiA FBdh, “Abi Abhc MWb-bhOi bifc UmfE MhB-Shb KhBchb, Abhc Gmf-FjOjb EFd MiSh ALpW Fi Wh, Shchc ghd-gFiFS UmGhS MhBShb, Sm Abhcm MhEAc EWjbSi UmCÀhz” gCcm FBdh, “ABÈh, Lgi-LhdhbSm MhEz” ²⁰ EC bjLhD ShW ZiZi Ac XjApØcm HhVhc CXcm KehBA bifcc XTm cEAWH EBdhz ShW ASE AèhB FmchbSic gC dhPi chGdhz

²¹ bhZjUm bjLhcm gjFjb Uidh, “Sjbi bifce HiA ghcdm Abhc UmEA FmchbSi EFd YochCWc LhbWm UmGhBE, EBdm Abi Shc Uidcm XhfhW ZhWhBdibj, gm bhWfcm LheS WhDz ²² Sjbi YochCWcm FBE, bhZjUm WiMm FBLpW, ‘ZWi BLchBd S Abhc Ze XjSc dhGhWz ²³ Abi WiMm Sjbhcm gjFjb FcLdhb, Abhc DZhUSE MhBSH Fci Sjbi Abhc XjScm Lhei UiShD, EBdm Sjbi bhWL Whz DcUhd AbiE Sjbhc Ze XjScm bhcidibjz’ ”

²⁴ ZhUm bifce MhEAc XTE chBS FhOhBZhc Mh-HhS ABdm bhZjUm bjLhcm bhcidish Fci bjGh-bjGi EBdhz ²⁵ EBdm ShW ZiZi LYkchD DGhW VhchBd XhÍc dBA ShW XjAc bLdbhWi FchBèh Ac EFOh ShW MhbhB bjLhc XhEc bhMm LjABA FBdh, “dCc ZUdh Abi Sjbhcm MhbhB gifhZm XhBLiz” ²⁶ SmC bjLhcm bhZjUm Lhei Uidhz bLdbhWi Fhbc ZmXhcm LYkchD S EC FThC FBLdhz

²⁷ DcbhMm bhZjUm ghejWcm FBdh, “Sjbi bcjajbiS HiA bjLhc dHm UmGh FcEz” EC ShBW Hmdh Ac Aèhc Xhe Sjcc HmLm ABA bjLhcm XhBA Kjbh

Uidhz ²⁸ Ac bhZjUm MmSh MmSh FBZhc dhHi
 bjLhcm gjFjb UiLdh, bjLhD BSh gÀdsh ghcjWcm
 MhWhBdhz bhZjUm MS dhGhW FmchbSi UmGh-
 Wic gjFjb UiLpW, BSh gFdShC ShBW ghcjWcm
 ZjMhBdhz

²⁹ ZhUm bjLh Ac ghcjW bife UmfE HiA ZWi
 BLchBdc gFd bjcäicm Udh Fedhz ³⁰ bhZjUm bjL-
 hcm MSSh FBLdh, ghcjWm BSh gFdSh Shchcm
 MhWhBdh, Ac gC FmchbSi EFdE bhWfc LhbWm
 UmGhBdhz ³¹ DcdhHi bhWfm BSh DFiW Fedhz
 Shch MmZdh gjWdh, bhZjUm Shchc ZhD GiAd
 FcLpW, Shchc CXcc Mjdjb-bjLiZS UmGLpW, EC
 Shch ShWcm fBMUh Fedhz

5

YochCWC dHm XDdh fhÀhs

¹ bjLh Ac ghcjWm HiA YochCWcm FBdh, “bhZjU,
 MmBW ZWi BLchBdc Aèh, ShBW WiMm FBLpW,
 Abhc ZUh EFdcm Sjbi Lhei UmE, Abhc Whbm
 gM Fchc dhHi, Shch bcjajbiS giMcS FcSm EBZ,
 Sjbi Shchcm LheEz” ² YochCWm MjAX Uid, “B
 bhZjU AcF MW Fm, MmW gjFjb bhWiA Abi ZWi
 BLchBdcm Lhei UiShb? Bdh FjWj bhZjUcm Abi
 KiWi Wh, Ac ZWi BLchBdcmE Abi LheShb WhDz”
³ Shch FBdh, “BZchWi EFdc AèhD Abchcm UcfW
 UiLpWz DcdhHi Abch biWS FciAc Abchcm bcja-
 jbic ZhD SiW UiWc XT HiA, Abchc bhZjU Aèhc
 Whbm FjcZhWi FcSm UmCÀh, AcWhD ShBW gDS
 Abchcm HMZi Zmbhc UiA Zh MjĐc bhMm YhdhBA
 bhcidhBZh” ⁴ bifec ZhUfhD MjAX Uidh, “E bjLh
 Ac ghcjW, Sjbch bhWfcm FmWm FhbE ThFi Yich-
 BchD? MhE, SjbchE HiA FhbE dhHEz ⁵ UmGchD

Wi, UmfE Sjbchc bhWjf ZCS ZheiHmLpW, Ac Sjbchc dhB XhBA BShD FjWj Fhb Fcch Whz”

⁶ EC YochCWm gC UiWC bifci Mhdib fcUhc Ac BLchBdi LjZmUhc EFdcm gjFjb Fcdh, ⁷ “BO ZhWhBZhc dhHi Sjbch bhWfcm AHc dhGhW GmcWmch AWiA UiE Wh, Shch HiA BSh MjHhe FcCFz ⁸EBdm AHm Shch MSGhW BO ZhWhBS EGWE ES-GhW ZhWhBSm EBZ, DGhWE Fb EBS WhDz BSh AdfiA EBHmLpW Fci, EWE ABA Shchc Aehc Whbc FjcZhWi FcSh FBA KièhBchz ⁹Sjbch Shchcm AcE Fic FhbE dhHhE, SmC BShD FjWj dhGhW ZhMm bhS Wh gjWiA Fhbc bhMm bW UiZhz”

¹⁰ EC gi fcUhc Ac LjZmUhc EFd ZhcE HiA bhWfcm FBdh, “YochCWm FBLpW, EGW ThFi ShBW Ac BO ZhWhWic Gmc MjHhB UiSh WhDz ¹¹Sjbch MmW ThFi Xhc Gmc-Wmch MjHhBE, EBdm Sjbchc Fhb FjØhc FhbBd EBS WhDz” ¹² EC bhWfcm Gmc-Wmch SjFhBZhc dhHi ghch bifc UmfE Liì Hmdhz ¹³ Ac fcUhc EFdm Zhcm Zhcm ShHUh UiA Fpd, “AHm Gmc MjHhBA UmEAc Zhdh Sjbch XcSmF UiW MSGhW BO ZhWhBShD, EGWE ESGhW ZhWhEz” ¹⁴ YochCWc Mhdib fcUhc EFdm ZWi BLchBdc CXcm Mm LjZmUhc dhHhBLid, gC fcUhc EFd ABA LjZmUhc EFdcm bhBc-VBc FciA MiFhBd, “Sjbch AHm MSGhW BO UiShD, EGW ESGhW UmE Wh FmWm?”

¹⁵ EC ZWi BLchBdc LjZmUhc EFdm ABA YochCWc HmLm Whdif Uidh, “AXWhc B Hjdhb EFdc dHm Bdh ZmZghe FmWm Fcch? ¹⁶ fcUhc EFdm Abchcm Gmc-Wmch MjHhB UmBW Wh, Sh-E BO ZhWhBZhc gjFjb UmBW Ac AXWhc B Hjdhb EFdcm bhBc-VBc FcpW, EBdm Ulf S AXWhc WiMc fcUhecz” ¹⁷ YochCWm MjAX Uid, “Sjbch AdfiA,

FjeiA, DcdhHi FBchD bhZjUc Whbm FjcZhWi FchS MhBShbz ¹⁸ MhE, Fhb FcE HiAz Sjbchcm Gmc UmEA MhBS WhD, Sh-E XcSmF UiW MSGhW BO ZhWhBZhc FTh ALid, ESGhWC ZhWhBSm EBZz”

¹⁹ EC ZWi BLchBdc LjZmUhc EFdm ZjMdh, Shch ZiXUc bhMm XeLpW, FhcW Shchcm gjFjb Fch EBLm, AHm MSGhW BO ZhWhWi dhHS, EGWE ESGhW BO ZhWhBSm EBZ, Fb EBS WhDz

²⁰ Shch YochCWc HmL ThFi MhEAc XTE bjLh Ac ghcjWc dHm UmGh EBd, Dch CZhBA Zhc KhEAS ALdhz ²¹ LjZmUhc EFdm FBdh, “bhZjUm AXWhchc XhEWh fhMh UiZh, AXWhch YochCW Ac Shc CMic-WhMicc HmLm Abchem XKh-HhÙh ZhWhBA, Abchem GjW Fchc dhHi SdjAc WiA Shchc ASE UiLpWz”

²² EC bjLhD gicZhc HiA bhZjUc HmLm YciAU Fcdh, “E UiW UlWiAc bhdiF, Sjbi FmWm Sjbhc ZÙhcm bjLiZSE YhdhBdhD? Ac Abchem FiShèhHi ZmMidhD? ²³ YochCWc HmLm Sjbhc FTh gjWh- Wic ZhU ThFiC Sjbhc ZÙh EFdc CXcm Mjddb S AcE Zheilmz Ebdm Sjbi S FjØhc FedhD Whz”

6

¹ bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “YochCWc FiSh Ufh ED Sjbi UmGiE, Abhc ASc Mjc UmGdmC gm bhWfcm Lhei UiZz MjcAdh ASc FjUcS UmGdmC gm Shc Umf ThFi Dchem GmUhB UiZz”

ZWi BLchBdc dHc EAUh Aèhc BAU ALm

² AèhD bjLhc dHm ZhSKiS Fci FBdh, “Abi ‘bhZjU MmBW ALpW’z ³ Abi BZthgib, BLghF Ac BAFjZc HmLm fcZ-fÀibhw Aèh Whbm UiUhc UiShb, ‘bhZjU MmBW ALpW’ Whbm Shchcm

UiUhc UiShb Whz ⁴ Abi Shchc dHm EC EAUh FcLdhb, Abi Sjbchem FmWhW Umf Uibj, Mm UmfE Sjbch bjLhYic EBA cE, EC UmfC Abi Sjbchem Uibjz ⁵ GhL Fci bifci EFdm ZWi BLchBdcm Hjdhibi FchWic dhHi Dchc FhÜw gjWiA, Abhc gC EAUh BAU Fcdhbz ⁶ EGW Sjbi HiA ZWi BLchBdcm FE, bhZjUm FBLpW, Abi bhZjU, Abi Sjbchem bifci EFdc Sd ThFi Zhc Fci AWbj, Shchc Hjdhibi ThFi AMhU Fcbjz Shchem UmGhc bS fhMh UiA, Abhc FjUcSi ASUi Sjbchem GhdhL Fcbjz ⁷ gmfm Sjbchem Abhc WiMc ZÜh ZhWhBbj, Abi WiMm Sjbchc Aèh Ebbjz SmC Sjbch ZjMZhD, Abi Aèhc Sjbchc bhZjU, Ac bifci EFdc ahcc Sd ThFi AbiC Sjbchem ZhKhBLiz ⁸ Abi BZthgib, BLghF, BAFjZc dHm Mm Umfc FTh EAUh FcLi, gC UmfE Sjbchem dBA MhBbj, Sjbch gC Umfc bhdiF EBZhDz AbiC bhZjUz”

⁹ bjLhD HiA BSh gFdSh Shchem MhWhBdh, EBdm gi ZmThDA Mjdjb-SFdiY Ac Hjdhibi FcSm FcSm bW-bch EBMhEAD, Shch Ac bjLhc bhSm FhW Uidh Whz

¹⁰ EC bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, ¹¹ “Sjbi HiA bifcc ZhUfh YochCWcm FE, gm MhWj Shc Umf ThFi Dchem MhBSm UmDz” ¹² bjLhD MjAX Uidh, “ZWi BLchBdmC MmZdh Abhc bhS gjWmc Wh, Sm YochCWm Fidh gjWZ? Ac Abhc S bhSSm bjGE dhHiMhDz” ¹³ SmC bhZjUm bjLh Ac ghcjWcm FBdh, “Sjbch ZWi BLchBd Ac bifcc chMh YochCWcm FE, bhZjUm Abchem gjFjb UiLpW, ZWi BLchBdcm bifc ThFi Zhc Fci WmEAc dhHiz”

gMcS bjLh Ac ghcjWc (A:) ZhY-UhUhBØc XciKD

¹⁴ bjLh WZic WiMc MhSi ZWi BLchBdc XcVhW bjcäi EBdh gMcS BAFjZ, AèhD EC BAFjZc WDA Whb

UiLdh BLchBdz BLchBdc XjApW Ebdh cjZmW,
fibiEW, dmZi fg bjO ZhcEMW, EC dmZi Ebdh bjLh
Ac ghcjW GhÛhWc bjd bjcäiz

BLchBdc Ze XjA cjZmWc XjApW Ebdh gWjF, Xèj,
ghLic Ac Fcbi, Dch cjZmW GhÛhWc bjd bjcäiz

¹⁵ fibiEWc XjApW Ebdh MibjDd, MhbiW, EgU,
MhGiW, fjgc Ac Shc FmWhWi ZCc ScYh XjA fCd,
Dch fibiEW GhÛhWc bjd bjcäiz

¹⁶ GhÛhw ShdiFh gifhZm dmZic XjApW Ebdh Mh-
cLjW, FhghS Ac bhchciz dmZi DF-f fheSif ZcL ZhK-
iLdhz ¹⁷ MhcMic Hjìic XcVhW gifhZm MhcLjWc
XjApW Ebdh diZWi Ac fibiEz ¹⁸ FhghSc XjApW
Ebdh BbchW, BMghc, gmZcW Ac Cìdz FhghS DF-
f Smïif ZcL ZhKiLdhz ¹⁹ bhchcic XjApW Ebdh, bgdi
Ac bjfiz

DchC Ebdh dmZic GhÛhWc bjd bjcäiz

²⁰ BbchWc XjApW Ebdh bjLh Ac ghcjWz BbchWm
ShW YkYk BCGhZmMcm ZiA FcLdh, ShW XmOE
Dhc MWb EBLidz BbchW DF-f fheSif ZcL ZhK-
iLdhz

²¹ BMghcc XjApW Ebdh Fjchg, WmYH, MiGciz

²² Cìdc XjApW bifhDd, BdfhYW Ac MiSciz ²³ Ac
ghcjWm AbiWhUhZc Xjei Whgific ZBW Bd-
ifmZhem ZiA FchD, ShW gjcjÍh Ebdh WhUhZ,
AZigj, Adi-AMc Ac BLhbhcZ

²⁴ Fjchgc XjApW Ebdh Efic, BdFhWh, EZiAfYz
Dch Fjchgi ÈFdc bjd bjcäiz

²⁵ Adi-AMcc XjA Ebdh XiWgFz ghcjWc XjA Adi-

AMcm XjOiDdc Xjeicm ZiA FchD ShBc XmOE
XiWgfc MWb EBLidz

Hjii gifhZm Dch EBDh dmZi GhÜhWc bjd bjcäiz

²⁶ EC ghcjW Ac bjLhcm bhZjUm gjFjb FcLdh,
Sjbch ZWi BLchBdcm LiXhB Udc dhGhW bific ThFi
Zhc FcEz ²⁷ bjLh Ac ghcjWmC ZWi BLchBdcm bific
ThFi Zhc Fci AWhc FTh bifcc ZhUfh YochCWc dHm
bhSiLdhz

bhZjUm gMcS bjLh Ac ghcjWcm (A:) gjFjb Uidh

²⁸ bhZjUm bjLhc dHm MmUiW bific UmfE Zh-
SKiS Fcdh, ²⁹ gC UiW ShBW FBdh, “Abi bhZjUz
Sm Sjbhcm EGW MmSh MmSh FBBj, BSh gFdSh
Sjbi bifcc ZhUfh YochCWcm FBEz” ³⁰ bjLhD bhZjUc
UcZhcE AcM Fcdh, “UmGCÀh, Abhc S bhSSm bjGE
dhHiMhD, YochCWm FjWj Abhc bhS gjWZ Wi?”

7

¹ EC bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh “gjWE, Abi YochCWc
HmLm Sjbhcm Aèhc dhGhW ZhWhBbjz Ac Sjbhc
ahB ghcjWcm ZhWhBbj Sjbhc WZiz ² Abi Sjbhcm
Mmdh gjFjb Fcbj, Sjbi ECdh ghcjWcm FBZhd,
Ac ghcjWm ESh YochCWcm FBZ; MhSm gm ZWi
BLchBdcm Shc Umf ThFi Lhei UmDz ³ EBdm Abi
YochCWc Uidcm XhfhW Fcidibjz bific UmfE Abi
ZCS FmchbSi Ac FjUcSi didh-Gmdh UmGhBbjz
⁴ Shc ZhUmE YochCWm Sjbche bhSc Uhb UiS
WhDz SmC Abi bifcc CXcm Abhc AS dhHhBA,
UmGhc bS fhMh UiA bific Umf ThFi Abhc WiMc
ZÜh ZWi BLchBdcm LiXhBc dhGhW Udm Udm
Zhc Fcbjz ⁵ bifcc bhMm Abhc WiMc AS dhHhBbj,
bifci EFdc bhM ThFi ZWi BLchBdcm Zhc FciA
AWbj, EC UiW Shch ZjMZh AbiC bhZjUz” ⁶ ZhUm

bjLh Ac ghcjWm ECdh Fcdh, bhZjUc gjFjb bhYiF
Fhb Fcdhz ⁷ YochCWc dHm bhS-FThe fbD bjLhc
ZDEf ALid Afi, Ac ghcjWc Sichfi ZcLz

gMcS ghcjWc (A:) FmchbSic dhPi

⁸ EC fbD bhZjUm bjLh Ac ghcjWcm FBdh,
⁹ “YochCWm MmZdh FBZ, Sjbhc WiMc FjWj Fm-
chbSi Fhb UmGhE, SmC Sjbi ghcjWcm FBE, Shc
dhPi WiA YochCWc LhbWm YhdhBS, YhdhWic
dHm dHmC BOh ghY EBMiZz” ¹⁰ ZhUm bjLh Ac
ghcjW YochCWc HmLm Hmdh, HiA bhZjUc gjFjb
bhYiF Fhb Fcdhz ghcjWm YochCW Ac Shc CMic-
WhMicc LhbWm gC dhPi YhdhWic dHm dHmC
BOh ghY EBHmdz ¹¹ EC YochCWmE Shc HjWiW
Ac MhUlHic EFdcM AWhBd, ShchE Shchc MhUl-
bWĭ UiA ECdh UmGhBdhz ¹² Shch gFdmC MhcMic
dhPi Lhed, Ac DESh ghY EBHmd, EBdm ghcjWc
dhPiD Shchc gÀd dhPicm Hididiz ¹³ BSh UmGiAE
YochCWc Uid XhfhW cBd, gm Dchc bhSm FhW Uid
Wh, Mmdh bhZjUm AHm FBLdhz

Aèhc XDdh HMZ, XhWi dC EBHmd

¹⁴ ZhUm bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “YochCWc Uid
S XhfhW, gm bhWfcm LheSm chMi WhDz ¹⁵ Sm
Sjbi ZiAWi Zhdh YochCWc HmLm MhBE, Hmdm
UmGZhD gm XhWic HmLm MhBZ, Sjbi Shc dHm
UmGh Fchc dhHi Wid WUc XhcE CZhBEz Sjbhc
Mm dhPi ghY EBLid, EC dhPi ASE Fci WiEz ¹⁶ WiA
Shcm FBE, ‘bhZjU, MmBW BZchWi EFdc Aèh,
ShBW WiMm Abhcm XhPhBLpW AXWhcm EGhW
FBShb, Sjbi Abhc ZÛh EFdcM Lhei UmE, Shch Abhc
ZÛnHi Fchc dhHi bcjajbiS giMcS FcCE, Sh-E EGWE
Sjbi gjWchD Whz ¹⁷ DcdhHi EGW Sjbi ZjMZhD,

AbiC bhZjUz' EGhW FBA ghci Sjbi FBE, 'UmGCÀh,
 Abi WiMc ASc dhPi UiA EC Wid WUC XhWiS Zhei
 bhcbj, Ac gÀd XhWi dC EBMiZz ¹⁸ gAd bhL bciMiZ
 Ac XKh HÙ ZhcBZ, SmC bifci EFdm EC Wid WUC
 XhWi GhBSh XhcSh WhDz' ”

¹⁹ bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “ghcjWcm EC FTh FE,
 Sjbi WiMc dhPi dBA bifci EFdc gÀd XhWic CXcm,
 Umfc HhJH-Whdh, Ghd-Zid, AEc-ZhEc KhBcEZhd
 Sjbhc AS ZhehE, SmC BShc gÀd XhWi dC EBMiZz
 XhÍc GjUiA ZhWhBd Zh dhFeic XhSid-Fdfic bhMm
 TEA XhWiE dC EBMiZz”

²⁰ EC bjLh Ac ghcjWm bhZjUc gjFjb bhYiF ECdh
 Fedh, ShBW dhPi CKh Fci YochCW Ac Shc CMic-
 WhMicc LhbWm Wid WUC XhWiS Zhei bhcdh,
 SmC gFd XhWi dC EBHmdz ²¹ Wid WUC gFd bhL
 bciHmd, gFd XhWiS XKh HÙ ZhcBd, bifci EFdm
 XhWi Ac GhBSh Xhcdh Wh, bific Umfc gFd XhWi dC
 EBHmdz ²² bifci MhUlHic EFdmE Shchc MhUl-bWĪ
 LheiA ECdh Fed, DSm YochCWc Uid XhfhW cBdz
 gm Dchc bhSE FhW Uid Wh, Mmdh bhZjUm AHm
 FBLdhz ²³ ZhUm YochCWm bjLh Ac ghcjWcm XiL
 UiA Shc chMZheiS HmdHi, BSh FjØhsc FhW Uid
 Whz ²⁴ EBdm FjWj bifciD HhJHc XhWi GhBSm Wh
 XhchD, XhWi GhEAc dhHi HhJHc Xhec KhBcEZhd
 Shch HhS GjUidhz

²⁵ Wid WUC XhWiS bhZjUc HMZ WhMid EAc
 ZhUm fhS UiW HjMci Hmdz

8

Aèhc ULLch HMZ, Zoj

¹ EC fhS UiW ZhUm bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Sjbi
 YochCWc HmLm MhE, HiA Shcm FE, bhZjUm

WiMm FBch, Abhc GmMbS Fchc dhHi Abhc ZÙh
 EFdcm Lhei UmEz ² Shchcm Wh LheiA FjWj ZhVh
 Uidm, Abi Zoj UiA Sjbhc Aìh UmfE HMZ Rhdbjz
³ Aìh Wid WU ZojHm aciMiZh, Ac BSh ABA Sjbhc
 chMZheiS, gjSiZhC IcE, Sjbhc ZiLWhS CPiZhZ Ac
 Sjbhc CMic-WhMicc IcE, Sjbhc XtMh EFdc IcE,
 Sjbhc CÙhd Ac XiPh ZhWhBZhC HhbdhSE ABA
 ghbhBZhZ ⁴ Sjbhc, Ac Sjbhc CMic-WhMicc, Ac
 XtMh EFdc HScE Zoj CPiZhZ”

⁵ ZhUm bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “ghcjWcm FE,
 Sjbi Wid WU Ac Ghd-Zidc CXcm gC dhPiAdh AS
 ZhehBA Aìh bifcE Zoj AWhEz” ⁶ EC ghcjWm bifcc
 gFd XhWic CXcm ShW AS ZhehBdh, SmC ZojH-
 hBØm ABA bifc Umf aciA Mhb EBHmdh, FjWj
 MhHh Ghdi cBd Whz ⁷ EBdm MhUIHic EFdmE
 Shchc MhUI-bWÌ UiA bifcE ECdh Zoj AWdz

⁸ ZhUm YochCWm bjLh Ac ghcjWcm AWhBA
 FBdh, “bhZjUc HmLm AcM FcE, ShBW Abhc HmL
 ThFi Ac Abhc XtMh EFdc HmL ThFi B Zoj Efd
 gchBA WmCÀh, ShBdm Abi bhWfcm Lhei Uibj,
 MhSm Shch HiA bhZjUc Whbm FjcZhWi FcS
 Xhcmz” ⁹ ECHi bjLhD YochCWcm FBdh, “AXWm
 Abhcm PiF Fci FCÀh, Abi FjW fbDFjc dhHi biWSi
 FcShb, FjW fbD AXWhc Ic, AXWhc CMic-WhMic
 Ac XtMh EFdc Ic ThFi Zoj Efd gciA MhBShHi, HiA
 Ghdi HhJHE cBSh?”

¹⁰ ShBW FBdh “FhBdFjc dhHiz” EC bjLhD FBdh,
 “AXWhc MZhW bSC ECF, MhSm AXWm ZjMSh
 XhcpW, Abchc bhZjU Aèhc gbhWi Ac FmC WhBz
¹¹ ZojHhBØm AXWhc HmL ThFi, AXWhc Ic-Zhei
 ThFi, AXWhc CMic-WhMic Ac XtMh EFdc Ic ThFi
 gciA HiA Ghdi Wid WUE cBZhZ”

12 bjLh Ac ghcjW YochCWc HmL ThFi ZhcM
 Hmdh, HiA bjLhD bhZjUc HmLm YciAU Fcdh,
 YochCWc CXc ThFi ZoJHc HMZ gchWic dhHiz
 13 bhZjUm bjLhc AcMi FZjd FchD, Shchc Zhei-
 Ic, CPhW Ac ZÛc gFd ZoJ bciHmdz 14 Ac bhWfm
 BShcm MhHhD MhHhD Udh Fcdm, XKiA UmfE HÛ
 ZhcBdz 15 EBdm YochCWm MmZdh UmGd, HMZ S
 gciHmLm, EC gm Shc Uid XhfhW Fcièz Dchc bhSE
 Ac FhW Uid Wh, Mmdh bhZjUm AHm FBLdhz

Aèhc SiW Wæc HMZ, bfh

16 ZhUm bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Sjbi ghcjWcm
 FE, Sjbi Sjbhc dhPi ZhehBA bhOic VjdiS Zhei bhcE,
 SmC B VjBd bfh EBA Aih bife Umf aciMiZz”

17 Shch ECdh Fcdh, ghcjWm ShW dhPiAdh AS
 ZhehBA bhOic VjdiS Zhei bhcdh, SmC bhOic gÀd
 VjBd bfh EBHmdz EC bfhD bhWjf, MhWjAc Ac
 bifcc gÀd ZhD aciHmdz 18 Ac MhUIHic EFdmE
 Shchc MhUl-bWĪ UiA ECdh bfh ZhWhBS KhBd,
 EBdm Xhcd Whz bhWjf Ac MhWjAcc bhMm bfh
 cBdz 19 SmC MhUIHic EFdm YochCWcm FBdh,
 “BSh S Aèhc FjUcSz” Sh-E YochCWc Uid XhfhW
 cBd, gm Dchc bhSm FhW Uid Wh, Mmdh bhZjUm
 AHm FBLdhz

Aèhc KhBc Wæc HMZ, XjFc Xhd

20 ZhUm bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Sjbi YMcm
 CPIa YochCWc HmLm AMic EE, Hmdm UmGZhD
 gm XhWic HmLm ABZz Sjbi Shcm ECdh FBE,
 bhZjUm WiMm FBch, Abhc GmMbS Fchc dhHi
 Sjbi Abhc ZÛh EFdcM Lhei UmEz 21 MjUi Wh
 LheE ShBdm Abi Sjbhc, Sjbhc CMic-WhMic, Sjbhc

XtMh EFdc CXcm, Ac Sjbhc IchBØc bhMm Fhbe-
 hEch XjFc Xhd XhPhBbj, BSh Xhdm-Xhdm ABA
 bifci EFdc IcE Ac Shche ZfS-aiOh fg gFd MhHhS
 Mhb EBMiZhz ²² EBdm Abi Abhc ZÛh EFdc ZfS
 GhWh Hjfw DdhFhcm BSh ThFi ZhKhBbj, BWE
 XjFc Xhd ABSh WhDz SmC Sjbi ZjMShD XhcZhd,
 Abi bhZjU B UmfE ALiz ²³ Abi S Abhc ZÛh Ac Sjbhc
 XtMhc bhMm SYhS-XhcTÀ Fcbj, FhBd B WbjWh
 UmGZhDz” ²⁴ Ac bhZjUm ECdh Fcdh, YochCW Ac
 Shc CMic-WhMicc IcE FhbehEch XjFc Xhd ABd,
 Aîh bifc Umfc gÀd ZhD XjFc dhHi fcZWhf EBHmdz

²⁵ SmC YochCWm bjLh Ac ghcjWcm QhFhBA
 FBdh, “Sjbch MhE, Umfc aiScm Sjbche Aèhc Whbm
 FjcZhWi FcEHiz” ²⁶ bjLhD FBdh, “Bdh Fch PiF
 WhD, FhcW Abche bhZjU Aèhc Whbm bifci EFdc
 IiÛh Fch FjcZhWi FcSm EBZz Ac UmGCÀh, bifci
 EFdc LhbWm Shche IiÛh Fch FjcZhWi Fcdm Shch
 S Abchcm FhJFeUi BOhBA bhcidizhz ²⁷ Sm Abche
 bhZjU Aèhd Mmdh gjFjb FcZh, Abch bcjajbic ZhD
 SiW UiWc XT gciA HiA, ShW Whbm ECdh FjcZhWi
 Fcbjz”

²⁸ YochCWm FBdh, “Abi Sjbchcm Lhei UiAc,
 Sjbch bcjajbiS HiA Sjbche Aèhc FjcZhWi FcEz
 EBdm Zmfi UlcB MhBE Wh, Sjbch Abhc dhHiE
 biWS FciEz” ²⁹ EC bjLhD FBdh, “UmGCÀh, Abi
 AXWhc HmL ThFi gciA HiA bhZjUc HmLm biWSi
 Fcbj, SmC FhBd AXWhc HmL ThFi, AXWhc CMic-
 WhMic Ac AXWhc XtMh EFdc HmL ThFi XjFc
 Xhd gciMiZhz EBdm bhWfm bhZjUc FjcZhWi FchS
 MhBSm AXWm Ac FjWj ahEShZhMi FcpW Wh
 MhWjz”

³⁰ ZhUm bjLhD YochCWc HmL ThFi HiA bhZjUc
HmLm biWSi Fcdhz ³¹ Ac bhZjUm bjLhc AcMi
bhYiF Fhb Fcdhz YochCW, Shc CMic-WhMic Ac
Shc XtMh EFdc HmL ThFi gÀd XjF gciHmdh, DHjE
cBdh Whz ³² EBdm gicZhc YochCWm Shc Uid
XhfhW Fciè, bhWfcm Lhed Whz

9

Aèhc XhK Wæc HMZ, Xfjc beFi

¹ ZhUm bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Sjbi YochCWc
FhLhS HiA Shcm FE, bhZjU, MmBW BZchWi EFdc
Aèh, ShBW WiMm FBch, Abhc DZhUS Fchc dhHi
Abhc Z`Uh EFdc Lhei UmEz ² Shchcm LheSm
chMi Wh EBA EGWE ZhVh Uidm, ³ gjWiA chGE,
Z`Uc bhMm Sjbhc XfjBØc CXcm, IjehBØc, HhVhBØc,
CO, Ac Hcj-LhHd, bmehBØc CXcmE Abi bhZjUm AS
Uibj, ZmThDA Zmbhcc beFi Lheibjz ⁴ EBdm Abi
bhZjUm bifcc Ac ZWi BLchBdc Xfjc bhMm SYhS
Fcbj; ZWi BLchBdc FjWj Xfj bcSh WhDz”

⁵ Ac bhZjUm fbDE PiF FciA UidhBdh, LhbWc
FhBd ShBW UmfE B Fhb FcZhz ⁶ ghLhC ZhUc
UiW bhZjUm ECdhC Fcdh, SmC bifcc gÀd Xfj
bciHmdh, EBdm ZWi BLchBdc DHj XfjE bcdh
Whz ⁷ YochCWm bhWjfUi GZc dBA UmGd, ZWi
BLchBdc DHj XfjE bcLpW Wh; Sh-E Shc Uid XhfhW
cBd, gm bhWfcm Lhed Whz

Aèhc LD Wæc HMZ, YkO-Ih

⁸ EC bhZjUm bjLh Ac ghcjWcm FBdh, “Sjbch
ULBEMWc bjBO aciA C`UhdC Lhdi AWE, AWiA
bjLhD EC Lhdicm YochCWc LhbWm CXcmUi Li-
OhB UmEz ⁹ UmGZhDWM, BSh ghch bifc Umfc
bhMm XhSdh VjBd EBA gFd MhHhc bhWjf Ac

XfjBØc HScE YkO EBA Ih EBZz” ¹⁰ SmC Shch CÙhdc Lhdi AWiA YochCWc LhbWm CZhBA, bjLhD CXcmUi LiOhB Uidh, DSm bhWfc Ac XfjBØc HScE Ih Adh YkO EBdz ¹¹ Ac EC Ihc dhHi MhUlHic EFdm bjLhc LhbWm CZhBSh Xhcdh Wh, gFd bifci Ac MhUlHic EFdc HScE-E YkO EBdz ¹² EBdm bhZjUm YochCWc Uid XhfhW Fcièhz gm Dchc bhSm FhW Uid Wh, Mmdh bhZjUm AHm FBLdhz

Aèhc fhS Wæc HMZ, gid-SjYhW

¹³ ZhUm bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Sjbi ZiAWm CPiA YochCWc LhbWm CZhBA ECdh FBE, bhZjU, MmBW BZchWi EFdc Aèh, ShBW WiMm FBch, Abhc DZhUS Fchc dhHi Abhc ZÙh EFdcem Lhei UmEz ¹⁴ WhBdm B Yich Abi Sjbhc, Sjbhc CMic-WhMic Ac Sjbhc XtMh EFdc bhMm Abhc gÀd MhSc HMZ Lheibjz SmC Sjbi ZjMZhd, ghch UlWiABS Abhc gbhWi FmC WhBz ¹⁵ Dc AHmC Abi Abhc AS ZhehBA ZmThDA beFi UiA Sjbhcm Ac Sjbhc XtMh EFdcem bhCShb Xhcdhb EWm; Sjbi UlWiAB ThFi ZiWhf EBHmdhD EWmz ¹⁶ ALdm DcdhHiC Abi Sjbhcm UlWiABS ESUiW ZhKhBLi, MhSm Sjbhcm Abhc didh-Gmdh UmGhB, Ac ghch UlWiABS Abhc Whb MhBc EDz ¹⁷ Sjbi EGWE Abhc ZÙh EFdcem LhechD Wh, Sjbhc ZmOhHici UmGh-BchD, ¹⁸ Sm UmGiE, FhBd B fbDD Abi EC dhGhW gid-SjYhW Ac bml Uibj, MmSh bifcc MWb ThFi ABM XcMØ FjWjUiW EBLm Whz ¹⁹ DcdhHi ZÙc bhMm Sjbhc XfjBW Ac MSSh ALm, BShcm AWiA IcE ghchE; bhWjf Zh XfjBW MmSh IcE ghbhBSh WhD, BShc CXcm gid XeiA gÀdOi bcZhz” ²⁰ SmC YochCWc CMic-WhMicc bhMm Mmch bhZjUc MZhWm QchBdh, Shch MdUi Fci WiMc Hjdhb

Ac XfjBØcm Icc aiScm AWhBdh; ²¹ EBdm bhZjUc MZhWcm MmShD Uhb Uid Wh, Shchc Hjdhb Ac XfjBØcm ZÛc bhMm TBdz

²² ZhUm bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Sjbi ALbhWc ZhD WiMc AS ZhehE, SmC bifcc gÀd MhHhS gid-SjYhW EBZ, bifcc bhWjf, Xfj Ac GmSc gFd HhL-HhLhdic CXcm BSh XeZz” ²³ EC bjLhD ShW ASc dhPi CXcmUi Sjddh, bhZjUm bifc Umfc CXcm bmIc QhF-MidFhWic dHm gid-SjYhW UmEABdh; Ac ALbhWi PhOh MbiWE Xedz ²⁴ EC gidc dHm bmIc MidFhWi Ac PhOhE ALidz B dhGhW HMZi gid-SjYhW bifc Umfc MWb ThFi FjWjUiWE EBLm Whz ²⁵ ghch bifc Umfc ZÛc bhMc gÀd bhWjf Ac XfjBØc CXcmE GjZ Mjcm Mjcm gid Xed, Ac GmSc gFd Yfd Wi EBHmd Ac gFd HhL-HhLhdiE ahJHiHmdz ²⁶ Ghdi ZWi BLchBdc ZfS GhWh Hjfw DdhFhS gid-SjYhW EBd Whz

²⁷ ZhUm YochCWm bhWjf XhPhBA bjLh Ac ghcjWcm AWhBA Fpd, “B Yich Abi EXchV FcLiz bhZjU S XhF-XZiİ, EBdm Abi Ac Abhc XtMh EFd EXchViz ²⁸ Sm HMZi bmIc QhF Ac gid-SjYhW S ZCS EBLm, Ac MhcShb XhciAc Whz DcdhHi Abi EGW Sjbchcm Lhei Uibj, Ac AOFhBShb WhDz Sjbch Abhc dhHi bhZjUc HmLm biWS FcEz”

²⁹ bjLhD Shcm FBdh, “Abi OhCWc ZhBcm HiAC bhZjUc HmLm AS Sjdbj, SmC bmIc QhF, gid-SjYhW ZÛ EBMiZ, MhSm AXWm ZjMSh XhcpW B UlWiAB S bhZjUcz ³⁰ EBdm Abi S MhWi, AXWm Zh AXWhc CMic-WhMic EFdm EGWE Aèh bhZjUcm QchBch Whz”

³¹ B fbD GmSc gFd WhdiA HhL Ac Zhcdi Wi EBHmd, FhcW WhdiA HhLc Ykd Ac Zhcdic Leh

ZhcBA HmLidz ³² EBdm FjWj MhSc Hbc HhL Ze
Wh EAD BShc GmSi EBd Whz

³³ SmC bjLhD YochCWc LhbWm ThFi OhCWc
Zhcm HiA bhZjUc HmLm AS Sjddh, dHm dHm
bmIc QhF, gid-SjYhW ZÜ EBd, bmIc MeiE ZÜ
EBHmdz ³⁴ EBdm YochCW Ac Shc CMic-WhMic
EFdm bmI, bmIc QhF Ac gid Xeh ZÜ EBHmLm
UmGiA Shchc Uid XhfhW Fcièhz YochCWm gicZhc
HjWh Fcdz ³⁵ Shc Uid XhfhW EBMhEAD, gm ZWi
BLchBdcm Lhed Wh, bhZjUm AHm Mmdh bjL-
hcm FBLdhz

10

Aèhc AO Wæc HMZ, XJHXhd

¹ bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Sjbi YochCWc HmLm
MhE; Abi S Shc Ac Shc CMic-WhMicc Uidcm
XhfhW FcidiLi, MhSm Shchc LhbWm Abi Abhc
FjUcSi didh-Gmdh UmGhBShb Xhciz ² Abi bifci
EFdc CXcm MmSh MmSh FPiW HMZ UiLi, Shchc
bhMm FjUcSi MmSh didh-Gmdh MhBc FcLi, Sjbi
BOh Sjbhc AEdhU Ac WhSi-XjSic HmLm HY FcShD
Xhc, Ac AbiC MmW bhZjU BSh ZjMShD Xhcz”

³ SmC bjLh Ac ghcjWm YochCWc HmLm HiA
FBdh, “Aèh, MmBW BZchWi EFdc bhZjU, ShBW
WiMm FBch, Sjbi Abhc LhbWm bhTh WjABSm Ac
FSUiW gchBd cBShD? gjWE, Sjbi Abhc ZÜh EFdc
Abhc DZhUS Fchc dhHi Lhei UmEz ⁴ Shchcm
LheSm chMi Wh EBdm UmGiE, Abi FhBd Sjbhc
fibhWhS XJHXhd EFd Lheibjz ⁵ BShD ABA Sjbhc
Aîh MbiWcm ECdh ZmcidiZh, FjWj bhWfm bhOi
UmGS XhcS WhDz gid-SjYhW ThFi MSSh ZhK-
iHmLm, GmSc bhMm MS HhL-HhLhdi cBLm, BSh
gÀdsh Shch GhBdiZhz ⁶ Sjbhc WiMc Ic-Zhei, Sjbhc

CMic-WhMicc IchBW, Ac gÀd bifci EFdc IchBW
 aciA Mhb EBMiZhz Sjbhc bD-bjcäi Ac Shchc ZhY-
 UhUh EFdmE UlWiABS Shchc MWb ThFi ABM
 XcMØ FjWjUiW ECdh UmGLpW Whz” EGhW
 FBAC ShBW bjG YichBA YochCWc HmL ThFi Zhem
 HmdhHiz

⁷ YochCWc CMic-WhMicc Shcm Fpd, “B ZmOhD
 Ac FSUiW Abchcm LhShBS? EShc Aèh bhZjUc
 DZhUSc dhHi EShcm Lhei UmCÀhz AXWm EGWE
 FjØh ZjMch Wh Wi, Aih bifc Umf Wj LhcGhc
 EBMhc?” ⁸ EC YochCWm bjLh Ac ghcjWcm gicZhc
 AWhBd, AWhBA Fpd, “Sjbch MhEHi, HiA Sjbchc
 Aèh bhZjUc DZhUS FcEz EBdm Fm Fm MhBShD
 KhBchD?” ⁹ bjLhD FBdh, “Abch S bhZjUc Whbm
 gME MhBchbz Sm Abchc gicjÍhpW, bjcäi, XjA-
 XjeiW Ac Hcj-LhHd dBA MhBbjz” ¹⁰ YochCWm
 Fpd, “ABÈh, Abi MjUi ghLhC Sjbchcm gicjÍh-bjcjSh
 UiA Lhei UmB, Sm Sjbchc EC bhZjUE MhWj Sjbchc
 dHm EBA MhDHiz GZcUhc! Sjbchc bSdZ S ahdh
 WhDz ¹¹ Wh, Bdh S EBS WhD, Sjbchc gÀdsh WiSm
 UiShb WhDz Sjbch MmZdh MhBShDC KhBchD,
 Sm Ghdi ZmOhBW MhEHiz” EGhW FBA ghci
 YochCWm Shc LhbWm ThFi bjLh Ac ghcjWcm
 GmUhB Uidz

¹² SmC bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Sjbi bifc Umfc
 CXcm XJHXhdc dhHi AS SjdE, XJHXhdm ABA bifcc
 MbiWc gFd HhL-HhLhdi GhBdiZz gid-SjYhW ThFi
 MSSh ZhKiLm, BSh gÀdsh GhBdiZz”

¹³ bjLhD bifcc CXcm ShW dhPi bmdia Vcdh, Ac
 bhZjUm ghch UiW, ghch chBS Umfc bhMm XjZhdi
 ghEA Lhedh, EC XjZhdi ghEAD ZiAWm XJHXhd
 dBA AMidz ¹⁴ ghch bifc Umfc CXcm XJHXhdm Mhb

EBHmdhz bifcc gFd MhHhS XJHXhdm HiL-HiL
 Fcdh, GjZ ZmMhSi XJHXhd ABdh, ECdh XJHXhd Dc
 AHmE FjWjUiW EBLpW Wh Ac ZhUmE FjWjUiW
 EBSH WhDz ¹⁵ Shch Aîh MbiWc CXc Hjcididh,
 Umf AÛhBc EBHmd, Ac MbiWc MS GmS, HhL-
 HhLhdi gid-SjYhW ThFi ZhKiHmLid, BSh gÀdsh
 GhBdidhz Aîh bifcc FjWj HhL-HhLhdi Zh GmSc
 Yfd FjØhc cBd Whz ¹⁶ YochCWm MdUi Fci bjLh Ac
 ghcjWcm AWhBA Fpd, “Abi S Sjbch Ac Sjbchc Aèh
 bhZjUc HmLm HjWhHhc EBHmLiz ¹⁷ Sm biWS
 FciAc, Ghdi DGhW Zhc Abhc HjWh bhY Fci UmEz
 Abhc HmL ThFi B Fh’d EFdcm gchB WmEAc dhHi,
 Sjbchc Aèh bhZjUcm biWS FcEz”

¹⁸ ECbjLhD YochCWc HmL ThFi gciA HiA bhZjUc
 HmLm biWS Fcdh; ¹⁹ Ac bhZjUm GjZ Mjcm Xóibh
 ghEA Lhedh, BShD XJHXhd EFdcm GmUhBA LhY
 FciA Wid UciAS YhdhBd, bifcc FjWj MhHhS DHj
 XjFE cBd Whz ²⁰ EBdm bhZjUm YochCWc Uid
 XhfhW Fcièh, gm ZWi BLchBdcm Lhed Whz

Aèhc WD Wæc HMZ, AÛhBc

²¹ ZhUm bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Sjbi ALbhW
 bjGh Sjbhc AS ZhehE; SmC ghch UmfE ES IW
 AÛhBc EBZ, B AÛhBc AS UiA LEA MhBZz” ²² bjLhD
 ALbhW bjGh AS ZhehBdm SiW UiW XcMØ ghch
 bifc Umf GjZ IW AÛhBc EBdz ²³ SiW UiW FmC
 FmCcc bjGE UmGS Xhcd Wh, FmC MhHh ThFi
 deS Xhcd Whz EBdm ZWi BLchBd EFdc IcE
 FjWj cjfWic EahZ ALid Whz ²⁴ YochCWm bjL-
 hcm AWhBA Fpd, “MhE, Sjbch HiA Sjbchc bhZjUc
 DZhUS FcE, Sjbchc gcejÍhpWcmE WmEHi, Ghdi
 Sjbchc Hcj-LhHdc Xhd ThFCFz”

²⁵ bjLhD FBdh, “Abchc bhZjU Aèhc Whbm UiZhc dhHi, Xfj FjcZhWi Ac MhdhBd FjcZhWic XfjBW Abchc dHm WiSm EBZz ²⁶ Abchc dHm EBA Abchc XfjBWE MhBZh, Xfjc DGhW GjehE TBA MhBShb WhDz Abchc bhZjU Aèhc DZhUSc dhHi EW ThFi FjcZhWi Fch dhHZ, Ac FiSh FiSh FjcZhWi FcShb, BSh Abch gWE Wh Hmdm FBShb XhcShb WhDz”

²⁷ Ebdm bhZjUm YochCWc Uid XhfhW Fcièh, gm Dchcm LheSm chMi Ebd Whz ²⁸ YochCWm Fpd, “Abhc LhbWm ThFi ahHEz GZcUhc! Abhc bjGc LhbWm Ac FjWjUiW ABE Whz Abhc LhbWm MmUiW ABZhD, giUiW MhW GjABZhDz” ²⁹ bjLhD FBdh, “ahdh cm ahdh! Abi fG FciA FjWjUiWC AXWhc bjG UmGhS ABShb WhDz”

11

AGmci HMZc gjfiAci

¹ bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Abi YochCW Ac bife Umfc CXcm Ac bhİ DFOh HMZ Lheb, DcZhUm gm Sjbchcm EW TWm Lhei UiZ, Lhehc Zhdh gm Sjbchcm DÀmZhcm GmUhB UiZz ² Sjbi ZWi BLchB-dcm giFhB UmE, gÀd ZmOhBW-ZmOiØm Shhc bifci Aci-Ycic HmL ThFi fjWh-cjXhc HDWh-HhOi GjMiA WmCFz” ³ EC ghdSE bifci EFdc WMcE bhDA XhBSm bhZjUm fhBÌ Fcdhz DcbhMm bife UmfE YochCWc CMic-WhMic Ac XtMh EFdc HmLm gMcS bjLh GjZ BÌsi ZWiHmdhz

⁴ bjLhD YochCWcm FBdh, “bhZjUm WiMm FBch, Abi AVh chBSFjc Zhdh bife Umfc bhMUi MhBbjz ⁵ DSm HUiS ZEA YochCWc Ze XjA ThFi Zhch-ahWch ZhÜic XjA XcMØ, bife Umfc bhMm

cEch gÀd XciZhcc Ze XjApW bciMiZhz DcdHm gFd XfjBØc XDdh bmUh ZhBóhE bciMiZhz ⁶ B dhGhW Ufh bife UmfE FjWjUiW EBLmE Wh Ac EBS-E WhD, Aîh bife UmfE EC dhGhW FhÛw FhÛizhz ⁷ EBdm ZWi BLchBdc FjWj bhWjf Zh Xfjc ZhD DHj FjFjcmE Cg-gFcS WhD, MhSm AXWhch ZjMSh XhcpW Abi bhZjUm bifci Ac ZWi BLchBdc bhMm SYhS Fciz” ⁸ gmfm bjLhD YochCWcm FBdh, “EC fbD AXWhc gÀd CMic-WhMicm ABA Abhc PoJHE XeiA FBZh, AXWm AXWhc gFd bhWfcm dBA Zi-UhD WmBWHi, DcZhUm Abi ZhcBbjz” EGhW FBA ShBW HjLhD AHjBW EBA YochCWc HmL ThFi ZhcBA Hmdhz

⁹ bhZjUm bjLhcm FBLdh, “YochCWm Sjbhc FTh bhWS WhD, MhSm bife UmfE Abhc FmchbSic XcibhW AcE Zheoz” ¹⁰ DcdhHi bjLh Ac ghcjWm YochCWc LhbWm EC FmchbSi EFd UmGhBdhz EBdm bhZjUm YochCWc Uidcm XhfhW Fcièh, gm WiMc Umf ThFi ZWi BLchBdc Lhed Whz

12

AMhUi BU AUhD Fchc gjFjb

¹ ZhUm EC bife Umfc aiScm bhZjUm bjLh Ac ghcjWcm FBdh, ² “B KhÛGhw ZLcc XDdh KhÛ EBZ, Sjbch B KhÛcm ZLcc XDdh KhÛ HWiEz ³ SjbishBW Shbhb ZWi BLchBdc Udh Fci MhWhB UmE, EC KhÛc Uf ShciGE Sjbchc gFd XciZhcc bjcäiD, MhcMic XciZhcc dhHi DHj Fci bmeh Zh LhHdc ZhBóh WiZhDz ⁴ EBdm FjWj XciZhce Dc Hjî GhEAc bhWjf Fb EBdm, dhHh Icc bhWfc dHm bidiA, UlBE XciZhem MSGhW GhBSh XhcpW, gC EWjbbWm bmeh Zh LhHdc ZhBóh WiZhDz ⁵ B ZhBóh EBZ

WiGjS, DF ZcL ZDEfc XhPh ZhBóh EBSm EBZ;
 Sjbch bmeh Zh LhHdc ZhBóh WiShD XhcZhDz
⁶ Ac EC KhÛc KCĐ ShciG XcMØ BOhc MSW FcZhD,
 ZhUm Shbhb ZWi BLchBd DFdHm bidiA, Shch
 ghBÕhzhdh MhcMic XciZhem EC ZhBóhBW MZE
 FcZhz ⁷ MZE Fchc ZhUm Shch Dc FiLj dC WiA
 MS Ice Dc Hjî GhBZh, ES Icc UAcc KCFhPc
 ULBE HhdhS Ac CXcc KCFhPE EC dC dhHhBZhz
⁸ gC chBSC Shch B Hjî AHjBWUi LmFiA Ghbic
 Lheh cjOi Ac Siñ ghHc dHm bidhBA GhBZhz ⁹ B
 Hjî Sjbch FhKh, Zh XhWiUi chÛiA GhBE Whz
 Ghdi AHjBWUi LmFiA GhBE, Dc PoJ, Fèh fjÐh
 aiScc gÀdsh DGhWE LmFiE, ZhUm GhBEz ¹⁰ chBS
 XjAWic AHm GhWi fmf FciE, ZiAW XcMØ FjØhc
 ZhFi TBE Whz MjUi FjØh ZhFi cB MhD, Sm AHjB-
 WUi MhdhBdiEz ¹¹ B GhWi GhEAc Zhdh Sjbchc
 Fbcc FhXe bMZjS Fci YiÛiE, XhES MjSh dhHhBE,
 ASc dhPi dBEz MdUi Fci GhWi GhBEz BOh EBd
 bhZjUc Whbc AMhUi BUz ¹² gC chBSC Abi bife
 Umfc bhMUi MhBbj, Umfc gÀd bhWfc Ze XjAcm
 Ac Xfjc XDdh bmUh ZhBóhcmE bhcidibjz bifcc gFd
 UmZ-UmZic ZiKhc FciA fhMh Uibj; AbiC bhZjUz
¹³ EBdm Sjbchc UAcc KCFhPE dmXh dC UmGdm
 Abi ZjMbj B Ice Sjbch cEz DedhHi Abi bife UmfE
 HMZ RhdiZhc fbD, dC dmXh EC Ic ZhU UiA Lhb-
 WmUi MhBbjz bCSc HMZ TWm Sjbch cmghB Xh-
 BZhDz ¹⁴ EC UiWcm Sjbch BAU chGiE Ac Abi
 bhZjUc Whbm BUc UiW bhWiEz B BUcm Sjbch
 Abhc gjFjb bWE FciA gc-ghbmfh EAcfic Xc EAcf
 Vci bhWiA MhBEz”

Ghbic Lheh cjOi GhEAc gjFjb

15 bhZjUm FBdh, “Sjbch fhS UiW XcMØ Ghbic Lheh cjOi GhBZhDz XDdh UiWC MhcMic Ic ThFi gFd Ghbic YhdhB UiZhDz B fhSE UiWc bhMm MmHjD GhbicAdh cjOi GhBZ, Shcm ZWi BLchBd TWm YkLiA YhdhBd EBZz 16 XDdh UiW Ac fhS Wæc UiW Sjbch XZiï bidW-bhgYid AUhD FcZhd, B ULB UiW Ghdi Mcjci GhEA-UhEA Lheh ULLch FjWj Fhb-FhM FcZhd Whz 17 EC dhGhW Sjbch Ghbic Lheh cjOic B BU AUhD FciE, Abhc gjFjb bWE FciA EAcifc Xc EAcif Vci gc-ghbmfh B BU AUhD FciEz EC UiWC Abi Sjbchem LiXhB Udc dhGhW Fci bife Umf ThFi Zhc Fci AWbjz 18 Sjbch XDdh KhÛc KÇÐ ShciGc ghBÕh ThFi fjcj FciA, DFBf ShciGc ghBÕh XcMØ Ghbic Lheh cjOi GhBEz 19 EC fhS UiW MhSm Sjbchc IcE Ghbic FjWj Whb-WifhWh Wh ThFm, EC fbD FmC MjUi GhbicAdh GhWi GhD, Sm gm Sjbchc WiMc MhSic ECF Zh aiW MhSic ECF, Shcm ZWi BLchBdc fbhM ThFi YkLiA YhdhBd EBZz 20 B fhS UiW Sjbch MmWEC cEW h FmWm GhbicAdh FjØhc GhBE Wh; Ghdi Ghbic Lheh cjOi GhBEz”

21 bjLhD ZWi BLchBdc gFd bD-bjcäicm Udh FciA FBdh, “AXWhch MhCÀh, HiA MhcMic XciZhcc dhHi AMhUi BUc bmehc ZhBóh AWiA MZE FcCÀhz 22 Ac ‘DLjZ’ HhLc DF AOi Qhd dBA, XhSidE TEA dCS ZjehBA UlAcc KCFhPc UlBE HhdhS Ac CXcm dhHhBEz fhZVhW! fjcjM CPhc AHm FmC Icc Zhcm ZhcBE Whz 23 bifci EFdcM bhchc dhHi bhZjUm MmZdh bife Umfc bhMUi SficiY WiZh, EC fbD Sjbchc KCFhPc CXcm Ac UlBE HhdhS dC UmGdm, ShBW B Ic ZhU UiA LhbWmUi AHjABZhz AMchBd Yiciïhcm Sjbchc IcE ghbhBA bhcm UiSh WhDz

24 “Abhc ZhShBd gjFjb bWE FciA Sjbch Ac

Sjbchc AEdhU EFdm B BUcm AUhD FciEz ²⁵ Abi
 Abhc WiMc EAUh bhYiF Sjbchcm Mm Umf Uibj,
 gC UmfE HiA ghcdmE Sjbch B BU AUhD FciEz
²⁶ Sjbchc gjcjÍhpØm MmZdh Sjbchcm MiFhBZh,
 B BUc FhcW FiSh? BOh Fidh ABLm? ²⁷ Sm
 Sjbch MjAX UiE, BOh bhZjUc Whbm AMhUi BUc
 FjcZhWiz bifci EFdcm bhczhc Zhdh ShBW bifc
 UmfE ZWi BLchBdc Ic ZhU UiA LhbWmUi AHjAB
 HiA, Abchcm AMhU FcLdhz” BGhW gjWiA gFd bh-
 Wfm bhZjUcm fBMUh Fedhz ²⁸ bjLh Ac ghcjWcm
 bhZjUm Mmdh ZhShB UiLdh, ZWi BLchBd Efd
 Shchc IcE HiA EC dhGhW Fhb Fedhz

Uf Wæc Zh AGmci HMZ, Ze XjAc bCS

²⁹ gmfm bhM chBSm EC dhGhW IOd, bhZjUm
 HUiS ZEA YochCWc XjA TWm Mmd GhWhc ZÜic
 XjA XcmØ gÀdcm bhcididhz bifc Umfc gÀd XciZhcc
 Ze XjApW Ac XfjBØc XDdh bmUh ZhBóhcmE ShBW
 bhcididhz ³⁰ SmC YochCW Ac Shc CMic-WhMic
 Efd, bifcc gFd bhWjf gMhH EBA CPdh, Aîh bifc
 UmfE ZmThDA FhÛwc cjBd Xed; FhcW Edh FjWj
 Ic cBLid Wh, Mm IcE FmC Wh FmC bcLm Whz

bifc UmfThFi ZWi BLchBdc giMcS

³¹ gC chBSC YochCWm bjLh Ac ghcjWcm AWhBA
 Fpd, “Sjbch MdUi MhE, ZWi BLchBdcm dBA Abhc
 XtMhc HmL TWm gcEz Sjbch Mmdh FBL, ECdh
 HiA bhZjUc DZhUS FcEz ³² Sjbchc MZhW bSC
 Sjbchc Hcj-bmehc Xhd WmEHiz Sjbch AbhcmE
 WmF ULA UmEz”

³³ bifci EFdm GjZ QchBdh, Shch bWE Fedh
 ShchE bciMiZhZ DcdhHi Shch ShHUH UiSh dhHdh,
 ZWi BLchBd gÀd MdUi Fci ZiUhD EBSHz ³⁴ ZWi

BLchBdm Shchc bDUhc GhBc bhMm Ghbic Xjch-
 BZhc AHmC, GhB fg HhbdhBW FhXeUi HhBO
 ZhÛiA FhÛE dBdhz ³⁵ gFd ZWi BLchBdm bjLhc
 Xchbif bS, bifci EFdc fjWh-cjXhc HDWh-HhOi Ac
 FhXe-KjXe GjMiA Widhz ³⁶ bhZjUm AH TWmC
 bifci EFdc Uidc bhMm DF UDA-bhDA XDUh FcLdh,
 MhSm ZWi BLchBdm MmSh GjMiZh, EShC MhWj
 Shchcm UmBWz EC dhGhW Fci Shch bifci EFdc
 ZCS VW-UCdSE FZMh Fcdhz

³⁷ ESh WiA ZWi BLchBd Efd chbhfmf DdhFh
 ThFi fjÀsc bjGh cEAWh EBdhz Shchc bhMm
 EWjhbW LD dhG fZd ZmOhBW AOiA Hmdhz Dchc
 dHm ZmOiW Ac gjcjÍhpWE ALdhz ³⁸ ZWi BLchBd
 ZhUmE Shchc dHm cEch AcE ZCS bhWjf, Hcj-
 bmehc Xhd gFdSh bidiA ZCS Ze Ud ZhÛiA cEAWh
 Uidhz ³⁹ ZhUm Shch bifc ThFi AWh gC bDUhc GhB
 UiA Ghbic Lheh cjOi ZhWhBdhz bifc ThFi Shchcm
 MdUi Fci ZiUhD UmEAD B GhBS Ghbic bhGhBZhc
 fbDC XhBLdh Wh, Ac XTc dhHi FjWj bLhE WiSh
 XhcLdh Whz

⁴⁰ ZWi BLchBd Efd bifcE gFdShD KhBcf Sif ZcL
 ZfS FcLdhz ⁴¹ PiF EC KhBcf Sif ZcL Xjch EBZhc
 UiWE bhZjUc gÀd ZÛh, LiXhB Udc dhGhW ghMiA
 bifc Umf ThFi ZhcBdhz ⁴² EC chBS bhZjUm AXW
 FjUcSi LhDAD Xhghch UiA Shchcm bifc Umf ThFi
 Zhc FciA AWhD, B chBSGhW DZhUSic chBSz gÀd
 ZWi BLchBdc dhHi EAcifc Xc EAcif Vci, bhZjUc
 Whbm CMhHci Fchc DF GhL chBSz

AMhUi BU AUhD Fchc WiEb-FhWjW

⁴³ bhZjUm bjLh Ac ghcjWcm FBdh, “AMhUi BUc
 FjcZhWic WiEb-FhWjW Abi Sjbchcm giFhB UiAcz
 gjWE, EBÛ FjWj MhSic bhWfcm Dc Hjî GhBSm

UiZhD Whz ⁴⁴ EBdm GciUh Hjd hbm bLdbhWi Fch-
 Wic ZhUm BSh GhBS XhcZz ⁴⁵ EBÛ MmFjWj MhSic
 bjLhYic Zh ZmSWUhci FhbdhcmE BSh GhEABE
 Whz ⁴⁶ Sjbch Mhc ZheiS Xfj MZE FcZhD gC ZheiSC
 Dc Hjî GhBSm EBZ; Zheic Zhcm FjØhc WiZhD
 Wh, Xfjc FjWj AQQi ahJHiZhD Whz ⁴⁷ Shbhb ZWi
 BLchBdm EC BU AUhD FcZhDz ⁴⁸ Sjbchc dHm
 cEch FjWj AZhUicm MjUi bhZjUc Whbc B BU
 bhWS KhD, Sm XDDh Shc XciZhcc gFd ZmOhBØc
 bLdbhWi FchWi dhHZz ZhUm gm ZWi BLchBdc
 dhGhW BU AUhD FcS XhcZz EBdm bLdbhWi
 FchWi Lheh FmC B Hjî GhBS XhcS WhDz ⁴⁹ ZWi
 BLchBdc dhHi Ac AZhUic dhHiE DF gbhW ABW
 Mhci EBdz”

⁵⁰ bhZjUm bjLh Ac ghcjWcm Mmdh gjFjb
 UiLdh, ZWi BLchBdm ghLhcc ECdhC Abd Fedhz
⁵¹ bhZjUm gC UiWC LiXhB Udc dhGhW Fci, ZWi
 BLchBd EFdem bifc Umf ThFi Zhc Fci Awdhz

13

Ze XjAcM Aèhc Whbm fXiA UiZhc gjFjb

¹ bhZjUm bjLhcm gjFjb Uidh, ² “Sjbi ZWi
 BLchBdc gÀd XciZhcc Ze XjApWcm Abhc Whbm
 AdH FciA fXiA UmEz BSh FjWj bhWfc XjA ECF Zh
 Xfjc ZhBóh ECFz gFdShc Ze XjApW AbhcCz”

³ SmC bjLhD bhWfcm FBdh, “B UiWGhWcm
 Sjbch BAU chGiE, EC UiWC Sjbch bifcc Hjd hbi ThFi
 AMhU EBLz bhZjUm ShW FjUcSi AS UiA Sjbchcm
 gW ThFi Zhc FcLpWz B UiW FjWj MhSc GhbicAdh
 GhWh GhBE Whz ⁴ AZiZ KhÛc EC ShciGE Sjbch
 ZhcBdhDz ⁵ bhZjUm Sjbchc ZhY-UhUhc HmLm
 EAUh FcLpW, FmWhWi, giOOi, Abjci, giäi Ac

MiZjMi EFdc UmfE Sjbchcm WiZhHiz B Umf UlV
Ac bCc ah×hcAdh Umfz Sm gWE HiA ghcdmE Sjbch
XcSmF ZLc AZiZ KhÛc EC BU AUhD FciEz

⁶ “Sjbch fhS UiW XcMØ Ghbic Lheh cjOi GhBE,
ZhUm fhS Wæc UiWE bhZjUc Whbm BU AUhD
FciEz ⁷ B fhSE UiW Ghbic Lheh cjOi GhEA dhHZ,
Sjbchc HmLm GhbicAdh FjWj MhSc GhWh MhSm
Wh UmGi, Sjbchc Aîh Umfc aiScmE MhWj FjWj
Ghbic Wh bidmz ⁸ B UiW Sjbch gFdm MhcMic
XjApØcm FBE, ‘Abch MmZdh bific ThFi ZhcBA
ABLdhh, EC fbD bhZjUm Abchcm Mmdh cgb
FcLdh, EShc BAUHhcic dhHi AbiE EGW Edh Fc-
chbz’ ⁹ EC dhGhW Sjbch MhcMic AEdhU EFdc
bhZjUc gjFjb Shdib UiE, MhSm Sjbchc bWE cD,
bhZjUm ShW FjUcSi AS UiA Sjbchcm bific UmfThFi
Zhc Fci AWLpWz Sjbchc ASc Zh FXhdc ShZiM-
FZMc dhGhW, EC ShdibcmE ghbmfh KGjc LhbWm
chGiEz ¹⁰ DcdhHi XcSmF ZcL EC EÃ ABdmC Sjbch
B WiEb AUhD FciEz

¹¹ “bhZjUm Sjbchc HmLm Ac Sjbchc ZhY-
UhUhBØc HmLm Mmdh EAUh FcLpW, EC EAUh
bhYiF ShBW Sjbchcm FmWhWi EFdc Umf UhW
FcLpWz Sm bhZjUm gWE WiA ghcdm, ¹² Sjbch
MhcMic Ze XjAcm bhZjUc Whbm fXiA UidhBE;
DcdHm Sjbchc gFd XfjBØc XDdh bmUh ZhBóhcmE
bhZjUc Whbm UidhBE, BSh S bhZjUcCz ¹³ EBdm
gFd HhViØc XDdh bmUh ZhBóhc ZUdh, Sjbch
DHj bmehc ZhBóh UiA GhdhL FchBEz GhdhL Wh
FchBdm HhVh ZhBóhc HcUWh ahJHi UiEz bWE
chGiE, Sjbchc gÀd XciZhcc Ze XjApWcm GhdhL
FchWi dhHZz

¹⁴ “Sjbchc XjApØm MmZdh MiFhBZh, BSh FiShc
dhHi Fch dhHm? Sjbch MjAX UiE, ‘bhZjUm ShW

FjUcSi AS UiA Abchcm bifcc Hjdhibi ThFi AMhU
 Fci AWLpWz ¹⁵ YochCWm Wh-gjhbci FciA MmZdh
 Abchcm ABSm Uid Wh, EC fbD bhZjUm bifc Umfc
 gFd XciZhcc Ze XjApØcm, bhWfc XjApW Ac XfjBØc
 XDdh bmUh ZhBóhBWcm bhcièhz EC FhcWm
 Abchc Ze XjApWcm bhZjUc HmL ThFi GhdhL
 FchB, Ac Xfjc XDdh bmUh ZhBóhcm FjcZhWi UmBz
¹⁶ BOh EbW DF BAUHhcic BU, AS Zh FXhdE ZhÙh
 ShZiM-FZMc dhGhW MhWj ghbmfh KGjc LhbWm
 cD, Ac bhZjUm ShW FjUcSi AS UiA Abchcm bifc
 ThFi Zhc Fci AWLpW, EGhW bWE cDz' ”

Aèhc FjUcSi ghMich bmIc Ac AHjWic KhFh

¹⁷ YochCWm ZWi BLchBdcm Lhehc ZhUm,
 Yidiwi EFdc Umfc bhMUi fiUh XT ThFdmE AèhD
 Shchcm gi XTmUi Widh Whz AèhD FBdh, gmfm
 MjUi FjWj MjÐc bjFhZidh Fch dhHm, Sm bhWfm
 MjÐc Qcm gicZhcc bifcE Yici MiS Xhcmz ¹⁸ DcdhHi
 ShBW bhWfcm Wid UciAc XhcmUi bcjajbi ZhD
 WmEABdh; Shbhb ZWi BLchBdm LiXhB Udc
 dhGhW ghMi-Xhei bifc Umf ThFi cEAWH EBdhz
¹⁹ MhEAc Zhdh bjLh WZiD gMcS BCLjYc FDZc
 ThFi ShW AQQi-HjQQi dHm Fci Widhz BCLjYo
 ZWi BLchBdcm bMZjS Fci FLb FchB FBLdh, “AèhD
 WiKD Sjbchcm gmYhMS FcZh, Sm Sjbch MhEAc
 Zhdh Abhc AQQiHjBW SjdiA dHm Fci WiEHiz”

²⁰ ZhUm Shch fjÀs OhCW ThFi cEAWH EBA
 bcjajbic FiWhchE DTb Whbc MhHhS ABA Shæj
 Hheidhz ²¹ Ac bhZjUm Shchcm XT KiWhWic dhHi
 UiWc Zhdh bmIc KhFhc LjcSm cBSh, Ac chBSc
 ZhdhD Yc UmGhWic dhHi AHjWic KhFhc LjcSm
 Shchc AHm-AHm MhBSh, DcdhHi Shch chBS-UiW
 gbhWm KdSh XhcShz ²² bhWfc LhbWm ghbmfh

UiWc Zhdh bmIc KhFh Ac chBSc Zhdh AHjWic
KhFh cBSz

14

YochCWm ZWi BLchBdcm VchS ABd

¹ bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, ² “Sjbi ZWi BLchB-
dcm FE, Shch IjciA ABA Yhbh-gicjS Whbc Mh-
Hhc FhÛhs biHuld Ac UciAc bhMhbhMi, Zhd-
LhYW DdhFhc LhbWm UciAc KcE Shæj HheiShz
³ BSh UmGdm YochCWm bWE FcZ, ZWi BLchBdm
FjWjZhD XT Wh XhBA IjchIjci FcSm FcSm bcja-
jbiS AOFi HmLpWz ⁴ Abi YochCWc Uidcm XhfhW
ZhWhBbj, gm Sjbchc Gcm Gcm GmUhWiS ABZz
SmC YochCW Ac Shc LiXhB EFdcmUi Abhc Whb
CMidh EBZ; BSh UmGiA bifci EFdmE ZjMidizh,
AbiC bhZjUz” bhZjUc gjFjb bhYiF ZWi BLchBdm
ECdh Fcdhz

⁵ ghLhC bifcc ZhUfh YochCWm MmZdh GZc
XhBd, ZWi BLchBd EFd ahHiHmLpW, gjWiAC
YochCW Ac Shc CMic-WhMicc Uid YiciHmdz Shch
FBdh, “ghD, ghD! Abch BSh FiSh FcLi? BShcm
Abchc Hjdhibi ThFi FmWm Lhedhb?” ⁶ EGhW
FBAC YochCWm Shc MjĐc cT ghMhWic gjFjb UiA,
Shc LiXhB EFdcm MjBS FchBdz ⁷ gm Shc GhL
fÃibhw Ldf cT, bifcc gÀd cThBW Ac Dchc Khd-
FUhc LiXhBcmE dHm dBdz ⁸ bhZjUm bifcc ZhUfh
YochCWc Uidcm XhfhW Fcièh, gm ZWi BLchBdc
Gcm Gcm GmUhWiS ABdz Dch MmZdh giçS Fci
AOiA MhBch, EC fbD gm Dchem VchS ABdz ⁹ gm
bifc Umfc gFd Ije-LEAc LiXhB, cTAdh LiXhB fg Aîh
Acbi Ud dBA Dchem Vchc dhHi Dchc FhÛhs ABèz
EC fbD ZWi BLchBd EFd UciAc XhcE Zhd-LhYWc
LhbWm Yhbh-gicjSc FhÛhs ALdhz

10 Shch FhÙhs ASmC ZWi BLchBdm KhBA UmGdh, Shche Gcm EBA bifci LiXhB Abch; UmGiAC MhWc Qcm bhZjUc UcZhcE FhÙW dhHhBdhz 11 Shch bjLhcm FBdh, “bifce FDZc UiZhc MhHh WhB UmGiA, Abchem bhCShD Fci EC bcjajbiS dBA ABL Wi? Sjbi BSh FiSh FcdhD? FmWm Abchem bifc ThFi Zhc FcdhD? 12 bifcc aiScm Abch Sjbhem FBLi Wh Wi, Abchem EWE cBSm UmE, Abch bifciØc Hjdhibi Fci? B bcjajbiS bche KhBSm bifciØc Hjdhibi FchC S Abche dhHi ahdh ALidz”

13 bjLhD Shchem FBdh, “Sjbch QchBE Whz gFdm WichB EBA UmGE, bhZjUm ABM Fidh ZhKhBWz EC MmSh bifciØcm EGW UmGchD, BShcm Ac FjWjUiWC UmGShD WhDz 14 Sjbch EGW fhØi EE, UmGE, bhZjUmC Sjbche XÀ EBA MjÐ FcZhz”

Aèhc FjUcSm Wid UciA gjFhB Hmd

15 ZhUm bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Sjbi FmWm Abhc HmLm FhÙichD? ZWi BLchBdcm FE Wh LhbWmUi AHjABShz 16 Ac Sjbhc Asc dhPicm ZhehBA UciAc CXcm CKh Fci VcE, UciAcm ULB ahH FcidhEz SmC Shbhb ZWi BLchBd gjFWh ZhD AOiA UciA XhcEBZhz 17 GiAd chGiE, Abi bifci EFdc Uid Edh XhfhW ZhWhBbj, Shch Dchem Vche WiESm UciAS ghbbZhz DcZhUm YochCW, Shc LiXhB, Shc cThBW, Shc Ije-LEAc EFdc bhMUi Abhc Mhdhd-fhW MhBc EBZz 18 YochCWc ghd-gFiFS UmGiA ZhFi bifci EFdmE ZjMidizh, AbiC bhZjUz”

19 DcbhMm Aèhc Mm Yiciîh ZWi BLchBdc AHm EBA MhEAS ALdh, DBW MhHh ZUdhBA ZWi BLchBdc Gcm HmdhHiz DW dHm EBA FjUcSi gC bmIc KhFhE LhbWm ThFi gciA Gcm ABèz

20 Gcm ABA bifci Ac BLchBdi UlBE Udc bhMGhWE

CZhBdz DcdhHi EC bmIc KhFhc AÙhBcm bifci EFd
 AÙhBcs XeiHmdh, Shch chBSc Zhdh ZWi BLchBdc
 FhÙh dBSH Xhcdh Whz EBdm ZWi BLchBdc
 LhbWm chBSc ZhdhE bmIc KhFhc Ycfh cBdz

²¹ ZhUm bjLhD UciAc CXcm ShW AS ZhehBdh,
 Ac bhZjUm ghch chBS GjZ Mjcm XjZhdi ghEA UiA
 UciAc XhWi gchBA UlB ZhO Fcièh, UciA gjFhBA
 bhMmUi gjFWWh XT ZhcBdz ²² ZWi BLchBd EFdm
 gjFWWh XhD UciAc bhMUi cEAWWh Uidh, UciAc
 XhWi Shchc QhBWm-ZhCD EAdc dhGhW CZhB
 cBdz

²³ BSh UmGiA bifci EFdm Shchcm GmUhBA
 UciAc gC gjFWWh XTmUi Hmdhz YochCWc gÀd
 cT, Ijeh, Ac Ije-LEAc EFd GmUhB GmUhB UciAc
 gC XTE HiA ghbhBdhz ²⁴ Ac XShZhhdh bhZjUm
 gC FjUcSi AHjBW Ac bmIc KhFh ThFi bifci LiX-
 hBc ZhD dhÛsi WMcm KhBdh, SmC Shch ZmUifh
 dhHiHmdhz ²⁵ ShBW Dchc cTc KhÀh Wì Fci Uidh,
 DcdhHi Shchc GjZ Fì EBdm cT KhdhWiS cBd;
 DcbhMm Shch DFM-EBÛcm Fpd, “EBLm, Ac ZhU
 UmE, Abch ZWi BLchBdc Gc TWm gci MhBz
 bhZjUm WiMm Shchc XÀ EBA, Abchc dHm MjÐ
 Fcchz”

²⁶ EC fbD bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Sjbi UciAc
 CXcm gicZhc AS ZhehEz Sjbhc AS ZhehBdm XhWi
 gicZhc bifciØc CXcm, Shchc cT Ac Ije-LEAcc CXcm
 ABäz” ²⁷ bjLhD UciAc CXcm AS ZhehBdh, Ac ZiAW
 EAc AHmC UciAc XhWi gicZhc gbhW EBHmd; bif-
 ciØm QhBWm-ZhCD UCeh-UCei dhHhBdh, EBdm
 bhZjUm Shchcm UciAc XhWiUi ahEAB Uidhz
²⁸ XhWi gicZhc MhHhS ABè, Shchc cThBW, LiX-
 hBW, Ac Ije-LEAc EFd, bhWi ZWi BLchBdc Gcm
 EBA GmUhWiS AEch gÀdSh XhWiD ZjeiHmd, DHjE

MiSh cBdh Whz ²⁹ EBdm ZWi BLchBd EFdm
 gjFWh XTm UciAc bhMUi Hmdh, Shchc QhBWm-
 ZhCD XhWi EAdc dhGhW CZhB cBdz

³⁰ EC WbjWhD bhZjUm gi UiW bifci EFdc AS
 ThFi ZWi BLchBdem ZhKhBdh, Shch WiMc KCGm
 UmGdh, bifciØc bch dhf UciAc KcE ahfi cBLmz

³¹ bifciØc CXcm bhZjUc FjUcSi didh-Gmdh Um-
 GiA, ZWi BLchBdmE bhZjUcm QchB Hmdhz Shch
 bhZjUc CXcm Ac ShW Hjdhb gMcS bjLhc CXcm
 XjchXjc BbhW AWDhz

15

gMcS bjLhc (A:) ffFjchWh HMD

¹ Aèhc FjUcSm Wid UciA XhcEBA ABA ghcdm
 gMcS bjLh Ac Shbhb ZWi BLchBdm bhZjUc Whbm
 EC fjFjchWh HMD HhBdh,

“Abi bhZjUc Whbm HMD HhBbj,
 gFdc LhbWm ShW FjUcSi bgibh ZheiLm,
 Ije-LEAc fjÐh IjehBWcm ShBWC UciAc XhWiS
 YhdhBLpWz

² bhZjUC S Abhc Zd, ShBWC Abhc HMD,
 Abhcm ZhKhWic Fd-FZMh ShW ASE ALmz
 EC bhZjUC Abhc Aèh, Abhc ZhY-UhUhc Aèh,
 Abi ShW ghbU HhBbj, ShW didh-Gmdh ZDAW
 Fcbjz

³ bhZjU EBdh XDdjAW LiXhB, ShW WhbC
 bhZjUz

⁴ YochCWc cTcm Ac LiXhBcm ShBW XhWiS Yhd-
 hBdh,
 Shc WhbFch LjZmUhc EFd Wid UciAS ZjeiA
 bcdhz

⁵ HBW XhWiD Shchcm Hidiè,

- Ac ahci XhÍcc dhGhW Shch UciAc Sdm Hmd-
hHiz
- ⁶ E bhZjU, Sjbhc QhBW ASGhW FjUcSi didhD ach,
Sjbhc ASm WióD UlfbWcm Kjcbhc FcLmz
- ⁷ Sjbhc ZicjĐm MmShD dhHLidh, FjUcSi Zdm
Shchcm HBW HhSE YhdhBdhDz
Sjbhc XhPhBd HMZi AHjBWm, gjFWH Gmc-
Wmchc dhGhW Shchcm MhdhBdidz
- ⁸ Sjbhc WhFc Ubm gFd XhWi Udh EBHmd,
XhWic YkS EFd MhHhS CZhB cBd,
UciAc HBW XhWi KhÀh ZWiHmdz
- ⁹ UlfbWm FBLid, ‘Abi BShcm GmUhBA Wibj,
UCehBA WiA Vcbj, Shchc gFdSh FheiA AWiA
ZhOibjz
Shchc bhdUi Abi bhdUhc EBbj, BShUi Abhc bWc
GhBf XjchBbjz
Abhc SdjAcUi bhciA Shchc Whb biOhBdibjz’
- ¹⁰ EBdm Sjbi Yk UiA ZhShf UidhD,
Ac UciAD Shchcm Hjcidid,
Shch fifhc dhGhW HBW XhWiS SdhB Hmdz
- ¹¹ E bhZjU, FjW UmZ-UmZi Sjbhc gbhW?
Fm Sjbhc dhGhW ES XZií bghW,
Ac Sjbhc bS aDEJFc FjUcSi bgibh Fhc ALm?
- ¹² Sjbhc ZdAdh QhBW ASGhW ZhehBdhD,
Ac UlWiAD Shchcm Hidididz
- ¹³ Sjbhc GhL bhDAD Mmchcm ZhKhBL,
Shchcm S Sjbic KhdhBchD,
Sjbhc AXW FjUcSi Zdm Sjbhc XZií ZfS GhWhS
WichDz
- ¹⁴ BSh gjWiA gÀd MhSiD FhXich,
Yidiíwi Zm-UiW EFdc bW LOYO Fcmcz
- ¹⁵ BUlbc fcUhc EFd QchBA ZmUifh dhHiHmdh,

bjAZc WmSh EFdm Tc-TchBA FhXidh,
FmWhWi EFd QchBA gciHmdhz

16 Shche aiScm Qc-GY ABA ghhbBLm,
Sjbhc ASc PmdhD XhÍcc dhGhW WichB
EBHmLmz

E bhZjU, Sjbhc XtMh EFd, Sjbhc GciUh Hjdhb EFd,
XjchXjc Xhc Wh EA XcMØ Sjbi ECdh chGLz

17 Sjbi Dchcm WiA HhLc Kmchc dhGhW,
Sjbhc WiMc XheE cjBZhDz

E bhZjU, gGhWC Sjbhc ZfS GhWh,

Sjbhc AXW ASc Heh XZiİ DZhuS GhWh

18 E bhZjU, MjH MjH Vci Sjbic Ghdi ZhUfhB
FcZhDz”

19 YochCWc IjehBW, Shc cT Ac Ije-LEAc EFd
MmZdh UciAc bhMm ghhbB Hmd, bhZjUm
Shche CXcm UciAc XhWi YichB AWDh, EBdm
ZWİ BLchBd gFd S gjFWWh XTm UciAc bhMmUi
AOiA HmLdhHiz

20 ghcjWc ZBW gMcS bciEbE WZi ALdh, ShBW
QkHi ASE dBA ZhMhBdh, Ac ZhFi gFd ZmOiØmE
ShW GcmUi QkHi dBA WhKi-WhKi ZhcB ABdhz

21 Ac bciEbme bhWfc LhbWm ECdh HhBdh:

“Sjbch bhZjUc Whbm HMD HhE,
gFdc LhbWm ShW FjUcSi bgibh ZheiLm,
Ije-LEAc fjĐh IjehBWcm ShBWC UciAc XhWiS
YhdhBLpWz”

bcjajbiS ZWi BLchBdc LYc

(15:22-18:27)

gMcS bjLhD SiÍh XhWicm biPh ZhWhBdh

22 bjLhD ZWi BLchBdcm Wid UciA ThFi Lhb-
WmUi dBA cEAWh EBdh, Ac fjc Whbc bcjajbiS
Hmdhz Shchc MhEAc XTE SiW UiW Vci FjWj XhWi
XhBdh Whz ²³ ZhUm Shch bhcjA Whbc DF MhHhS
ABdh, EBdm giWc XhWiE GhBSh Xhcdh Wh, giWc
XhWi GjZ SiÍhz DcdhHi EC MhHhc Whb dhHd
bhcjA [bhWi, SiÍh]z ²⁴ Ac bhWfm bjLhc ZicjÐm
FhWh-FhWi Fci FBdh, “Abch EGW XhWi GhB-
Shb Fidh?” ²⁵ bjLhD bhZjUc HmLm YciAU Fedh,
bhZjUm ShWcm DHj HhL UmGhB Uidh, ShBW
gC HhLcm WiA XhWiS YhdhBdh, Ac XhWi biPh
EBHmdz

bhZjUm gC MhHhS ZWi BLchBdc XciÀh dBdh,
Ac Shchc dhHi WiEb-FhWjW ZhShB Uidhz
²⁶ ShBW FBdh, “Sjbch MjUi GiAd FciA Sjbchc
Aèh bhZjUc Fhdhb gjWE Ac EC dhGhW Abd FcE,
Abi MmSh XLÛ Fci ESh FcE, Abhc gjFjb bhWE,
Sm Abi bhZjUm bifci EFdcM MmSh Zmbhc-AMhc
UiLi, BSh FjWj Zmbhc Sjbchc CXcm UiShb WhD;
MhWE S, Abi bhZjU Sjbchc fiYh FcWmAdhz”

²⁷ gmfm Shch DdibE HiA XCLdh, giWE ZhcEHj
XhWic BÛhch Ac fÍBcHj GmMjc HhL ALidz Shch EC
XhWic FhÛhs Shæj Hheidhz

16

ZWi BLchBdc dhHi Zmgmîi GhWi

¹ ZhUm Shbhb ZWi BLchBdm Ddib ThFi cEAWh
UidhBdhz bifc Umf ThFi ZhcEWic ZhUc KhÛc XWc
ShciGE Shch LiW Whbc bcjajbiS ABA AMidhz
LiW EBd Sjc Xhe Ac Ddibc bhMGhWEz ² EC fbD
Shbhb ZWi BLchBdm bjLh Ac ghcjWc ZicjÐm
FhWh-FhWi dhHhBdhz ³ Dch UlBEMWc ZicjÐm

ZWi BLchBdm FBdh, “ghDcm ghD, BShc FThD
Abch FmWm ABdhh, bhZjUm FmWm WiMc ASm
Abchem bifc UmfE bhcdh Wh? gi fbD Abch Hjîc
QoHc FhÛhs ZBShb, XmO aciA Hjî-cjOi GhBShb,
EBdm BShD Abchem CXhfm Ac XmOc ajGm bhcSh
Fci EWE AWLpWz”

⁴ BGhW gjWiA bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Abi
Shchem XciAh FciA UmGbj, Shch Abhc WiEb-
FhWjW bhWpW Fi Whz Abi Sjbchc dhHi bmIc
WbjWhD Zmgmîi GhWi MbiWE Lheibjz bhWfm
ZhBcm ABA ghßhc XcSmF UiWc GhWi XcSi UiW
SjdiA WiZhz ⁵ Ghdi ghßhc LD Wæc UiWE Shch
MmSh SjdiA AWZh, BSh SpAc Fchc ZhUm EBÛ
UiWc GhWi ThFi QhZjd EBMiZz”

⁶ ZhUm bjLh Ac ghcjWm gÀd ZWi BLchB-
dcm FBdh, “bhZjUc ZicjÐm Sjbch MmZdh FhWh-
FhWi dhHhBL, Sm ABM ghBÕhzhdhc ZjMZhd, EC
bhZjUmC Sjbchem bifc ThFi Zhc Fci AWLpWz
⁷ ZiAW EBdmC Sjbch bhZjUc FjUcSi-Wjc UmGZhD,
ShBW S gjWLpW, Sjbch FiSh FhWh-FhWi FcLz
Sm Abch Ac FiSh MmW, Sjbch Abchc ZicjÐm
ESSh bhSichD?” ⁸ bjLhD Shchem FBdh, “bhZjUm
ghBÕhzhdh Sjbchem Hjî UiZh, Ac ZiAWm XmO
ach cjOiE UiZhz bhZjUc ZicjÐm Sjbch MmSh
FhWh-FhWi FcL, BSh ShBW gjWLpWz ALdm Abch
ULBMW FiSh MmW, Sjbch Abchc ZicjÐm ESSh bh-
SichD? B bhS S Abchc ZicjÐm WhD, Sjbch bhZjUc
ZicjÐmC bhSichDz”

⁹ DcZhUm bjLhD ghcjWcm FBdh, “Sjbi gÀd ZWi
BLchBdcm MhWhB UmE, Sjbch bhZjUc ZicjÐm
MmSh bhSiL, BSh ShBW gjWLpWz EGW Sjbch
ABA bhZjUc LhbWm AMic EEz” ¹⁰ SmC ghcjWm

Shchcm EC fjZhU MhWhBch, EC fbD bcjajbic ZhD
Shchc KCG XeSmC UmGpW, bmIc KhFhc bhMm
bhZjUc FjUcSi-Wjc MhBc EBLmz

¹¹ DcbhMm bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, ¹² “Abi ZWi
BLchBdc gAd bhS-FTh gjWLiz EGW Sjbi MhWhB
UmE, Shch XcSmF UiW ghBÕhzhhdh GhBZh Hjî Ac
ZiAWm GhBZh XmO ach cjOiz SmC Shch ZjMZh,
Abi Aèhc Shchc bhZjUz”

¹³ ghLhC ghBÕhzhhdh FjDd XhGic Xhd ABA Shchc
Aîh FmâE Mhb EBHmdh, ZhUc UiW ZiAWm GJA
XeIA Fmâc KhBcEZhD aiMiHmdz ¹⁴ ZmBd EAc
ZhUm EC GJA gjFhBdm UmGh Hmd, fhHjc UhWhc
dhGhW DF MhSc XhSdh MiWif bhOic CXcm Xei
cBLmz ¹⁵ BSh UmGiA ZWi BLchBdm DFm-EBÛm
MiFhBdh, “EZh, BSh FiSh? BSh FiSh XeLm, Abch
FmC S KiWchb Whz”

SmC bjLhD FBdh, “BSh S Zmgmî GhWi, Sjbch
GhBShD Fci bhZjUm UhW FcLpWz ¹⁶ EC GhWic
FThc bhZjUm gjFjb UiLpW, XcSmF MWm MhcMic
XciZhcc dhHi GhWi SjFhBA WmEz Icc gFdc dhHi
MW-bhSm DF XmOj Fci SjFhBEz” ¹⁷ SmC Shch
ECdh Fcdh, bhWjf EWjbhWm FmC Zmf Fci Widh,
FmC Fb Widhz ¹⁸ ZhUm XmOjUi bhXiA UmGdh,
MmBW Zmfi SjFhBLdh, ShWE Zmfi EBLm Wh,
Ac MmBW Tjeh SjFhBLdh, ShWE Fb EBLm Wh;
gFdmC MhcMic XciZhcc GhWic EWjbhWm SjFh-
BLpWz

¹⁹ bjLhD Shchcm FBdh, “Sjbch FhBd ZiAWFjc
GhWic dhHi BSh bjOmC MbhB TBE Whz” ²⁰ Sh-E
FmC FmC bjLhc FTh Wh bhWiA ZhUc UiWc dhHiE
Tjeh TBdz DcdhHi BSh XKiA Fieh-XjF MWbiA HÛ
ZhcBd; BSh UmGiA bjLh Shchc CXcm GjZ HjLh

EBdhz ²¹ Edh XcSmF UiW YMcm Shch MhcMic GhWic EWjbhWm SjFhBS, EBdm cpU Hcb EBdmC BSh HdiMiSz

²² ZhUm LD Wæc UiWE Shchc GhWic dhHi QhZjd GhWi, bhWi ULB XmOj Fci SjFhBd, Ac Hjic bjcäi EFdm ABA bjLhcm MhWhBdhz ²³ bjLhD Shchcm FBdh, “BSh PiF ALm, bhZjUmCECdh gjFjb UiLpW; FhBd S ghßhc fmf UiW, MjçhZhc; bhZjUc XhF-XZiï UiWz Sm Sjbchc MmSh chÛhc Ucfhc ALm BSh ABM chÛidhE, Ac ZichW Fchc Mcjc EBdm ZichW FcE, ZhFi gFdSh ZhUc UiW ZiAWFjc dhHi TB UmEz” ²⁴ EC bjLhc gjFjb bhYiF Shch ZhUc UiW XcMØ BSh IcE TBd, BShc bhMm FjWj HÛE ZhcBd Wh, FiehDE Vcd Whz

²⁵ ZhUm bjLhD Shchcm FBdh, “ABM Sjbch BSh GhE, FhcW ABM bhZjUc XhF-XZiï UiW, MjçhZhc ABM Sjbch ZÛc bhMm B GhWi XhBShD WhDz ²⁶ Sjbch ghßhs LD UiW B GhWi SjFhBE, EBdm fhS Wæc UiW S MjçhZhc, B UiW BSh XhBShD WhDz”

²⁷ Sh-E FjWj FjWj MWm fhS Wæc UiWE EC GhWi SjFhBZhc dhHi Zhcm Hmd, HiA FjØh XhBd Whz

²⁸ SmC bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Sjbch Ac FSUiW Abhc gjFjb Ac WiEb-FhWjW ahJHiShD? ²⁹ gjWE, Sjbchc MichWic dhHi B MjçhZhc S bhZjUmC Sjbchcm UiLpW, DcdhHi ShBW ghßhc LD Wæc UiWE Sjbchcm ULB UiWc GhWi UmBW; EGW ThFi EC fhS Wæc UiW, bhWi MjçhZhc Sjbch gFdm MhcMic IcE cBA MichBE, FmC Icc Zhcm MhBE Whz” ³⁰ Dc ZhU ThFi ghßhc fhS Wæc UiWE bhWfm MichBSz

³¹ ZWi BLchBdm B GhWic Whb TBd, bhÛh; BSh UmGSm Vdh Qkdh ZiKic dhGhW, Ac GhBSm bC bhGhBd XiPhc dhGhW bMhz

³² ZhUm bjLhD Shchem FBdh, “bhZjUm EC gjFjb UiLpW, Sjbch DF XmOj XcibhW bhÛh SjdiA Sjbche ZhUc ZJfVc EFdc dhHi Mbh Fci TE, SmC ShchE UmGZh, bife Umf ThFi Sjbchem Zhc Fci WmEAc FhdE bcjajbic bhMm ShBW FiSh GhEABlpWz”

³³ bjLhD ghcjWcm FBdh, “Sjbi DHj ZDAbc bhMm DF XmOj XcibhW bhÛh SjdiA bhZjUc LhbWm TE, BSh Sjbche EAcifc Xc EAcif Vci Mbh cBZz”

³⁴ bhZjUm bjLhcm Mmdh gjFjb FcLdh, EC dhGhW ghcjWm EC bhÛh ZDAbE acdhz ZhUm ShBW XZiİ fÛlFc aiScm fhghUS XhÍcc LhbWm TBdhz

³⁵ ZWi BLchBdm Khèif ZcL Vci B bhÛh GhBd, Shch MSUiW XcMØ bhWjf ZfS Fchc MhHh, bhWi FmWhW Umfc fibhWhS ABA Wh XCLid, ESUiW EC GhWiC GhBdhz ³⁶ DF XmOj EBdHi, DF Ykchcc Uf ZhOc DF ZhOz

17

ZWi BLchBdc FhBÌh, XhÍc ThFi FjUcSi XhWi

¹ ZhUm bhZjUc gjFjbm Shbhb ZWi BLchBd LiW bcjajbi ThFi cEAWH UiA, DF MhHh ThFi AcF MhHhS HiA HiA gmfm cYiUibE ABA Shæj Hheidh, EBdm giWE bhWfc GhEAc XhWi ALid Whz ² DcdhHi bhWfm bjLhc dHm FhBÌh Fci FBdh, “Abchem GhEAc XhWi UmCÀhz”

bjLhD Shchem FBdh, “Sjbch FmWm Abhc dHm FhBÌh FcchD? FmWm bhZjUcm XciÀh FcchD?”

³ bhWfm XhWic XiALm Fhgid EBA bjLhc ZicjDm Hhdi-HhdhM Fci FBdh, “Sjbi Abchem bhCshD Fci bife Umf ThFi AWL Wi? Abchem, Abche

gjcÍhpØcm, Abchc Xfjc Xhdcm AWhXhWiD bhc-ShD Fci EWE AWL Wi?”

⁴ SmC bjLhD bhZjUc HmLm YciAU Fci FBdh, “Abi B bhWfcm FiSh FcShb? Ac Tjeh Umci EBdmC S Shch FhJFeUi BOhBA Abhcm bhciDiZh?”

⁵ bhZjUm MjAXUidh, “Sjbi Mm dhPiUi Wid WUE Zhei bhclDhD, gC dhPi ASE dE, Ac ZWi BLchBdc FDMW bjcaïcm dHm dBA bhWfc AHm AHm MhE

⁶ HiA ghcdm Abi Sjc Xhec FhÙhs DF XhÍcc CXcm AMic EBBj, Sjbi EC XhÍcE Zhei bhcdm EHj ThFi XhWi ZhcBZ, SmC bhWfm GhBSh XhcZh?” ghLhC bjLhD BLchBdc bjcaï EFdc LhbWm ECdh Fcdh?

⁷ EC cYiUibE ABA bhWfm FhBÌh Fci FBLdh, “bhZjU FiSh Abchc dHm ALpW Wi, Wh gciHmLpW?” ECdh FBA Shch bhZjUcm XciÀh FclDh Fci, B MhHhc Whb EBd bhLh [bhWi, XciÀh] Ac bhciZh [bhWi, FhBÌh]z

AbhdmFi EFdc dHm ZWi BLchBdc MjÐ

⁸ EC fbD ZWi BLchBdc dHm MjÐ Fchc dhHi AbhdmFi LiXhB EFd cYiUibE ABdhz ⁹ SmC bjLhD ShW GhUib gMcS BCLhcm FBdh, “Sjbi Abchc bhWjf ThFi dhehB Fcch MW ZhLiA WiA, AbhdmFi EFdc dHm MjÐ FchS MhEz AbiE FhBd AèhB FjUcSi dhPi ASE dBA Xhec CXcm CZhBbjz”

¹⁰ BCLhDE bjLhc gjFjb bhYiF Fhb Fcdh? AbhdmFi EFdc dHm MjÐ Fcdh, bjLh, ghcjW, Ac gjc, EC SiWE MW HiA Xhec Oièhc CXcm CPdhz ¹¹ ZhUm UmGh Hmd, bjLhD MS fbD AS CKh Fci chGpW, ES fbD ZWi BLchBdc Ud MiSpW, EBdm bjLhD AS dhbhBdmC AbhdmFi Ud MiSpWz ¹² Aîm Aîm bjLhc AS ahc EA Vcdz EC Shch DGhW XhÍc AWiA bjLhcm

ZBZhc ZmZîh Uidhz EC XhÍcc CXcm bjLh ZBdh,
ghcjW Ac gjc UIBEMWm bjLhc ULB HhdhS CZhBA
ShW AS CKh Fci Vedhz SmC fjcjM QkZhc AH XcMØ
ShW AS CKh cBdz ¹³ DcdhHi AbhdmFi LiXhBc
dHm MjÐ FciA BCLh MiSiHmdhz

¹⁴ ZhUm bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “BSh BAU chGhc
dhHi Sjbi DGhW FiShZc bhMm dmGiA TE Ac
BCLhcmE MhWhEz bWE chGiE, Abi UIWiAc ZjF
ThFi AbhdmFi EFdc Whb biOhBdibjz” ¹⁵ bjLhD
DGhW FjcZhWi GhWh ZhWhBA Dc Whb TBdh,
bhZjU Whbc Abhc MjÐc Nh×hz ¹⁶ ShBW FBdh,
“bhZjUc Whbc MjÐc Nh×h Abch ASE dB, SmC
bhZjUmE EAcifc Xc EAcif Vci AbhdmFi EFdc dHm
MjÐ FcZhz”

18

gMcS fjABZ WZic dHm bjLhc (A:) bjdHfHs

¹ AèhD gMcS bjLhcm Ac ShW ZÛh ZWi BLchB-
dcm MS dhGhW cgb FcLpW, BSh gFdSh bjLhc
gCc bhUiAW Umfc Bbhb fjABZc FhWE Hmdz
bhZjUm ZWi BLchBdcm bife Umf ThFi Fidh Zhc
Fci AWLpW, DESh ShBW gjWdhz ² bjLhD AHm
ShW ZiZi LYkchcm gCc ZheiS XhPhB UiLdh, Dcd-
hHi ShW gCcm bjLhc ZiZicm Ac ULBE XjAcM WiMc
HmLm chGdhz ³ B ULBE XjAc bhMc DFMWc Whb
ALid MhcLjb [bhWi, ZpSd]z bjLhD FBdh, “Abi aiW
Umfe ZpSdc dhGhW cBchbz” ⁴ Ac ULLch MWc Whb
ALid DdiDMmc bhWi, [Aèh fghD]z ShBW FBdh,
“Abhc ZhYc Aèh Abhc fghD EBA Abhcm YochCWc
SdjAc ThFi gmYhMS FcLpWz”

⁵ bjLhc gCc fjABZm bjLhc ZiZi Ac ShW ULBE
XjAcM dBA bjLhc HmLm ABdhz EC fbD ZWi

BLchBd Ac bjLhc Shæj ALid Aèhc Xhe Sjcc FhÛhsz
⁶ ShW gCc EWE ABA bjLhcm GZc Uidh, “Abi Sjbhc
 gCc fjABZz Sm Abi Sjbhc ZiZi Ac UlBE XjAcm
 dBA EWE ABLiz” ⁷ GZc XhBA bjLhD ShW gCcc
 dHm UmGh FchS ZhcBdhz ShBW bhOiS fBMUH
 FciA ShW gCccm Lhdhb Fcdh Ac bhDac gjJHh
 Uidhz ZhUm UlBEMWm ahdh-Zjch MiFhBA ghci
 Shæjc aiScm ghbhBdhz ⁸ bhZjUm ZWi BLchBdc
 XÀ dBA YochCW Ac bifci EFdc dHm MmSh MmSh
 FcLpW, BSh gAdsh ShW gCccm gjWhBdhz bifc
 ThFi MhEAc Zhdh Shchc FS Fi EBLid Ac AèhD Fidh
 Shchcm ZhKhBLpW DEShe ShWcm MhWhBdhz
⁹ Ac bhZjUm bifci EFdc AS ThFi ZWi BLchBdc
 AMhU FciA Shchcm MS dhGhW ALhW FcLpW,
 BSh gjWiA ShW gCc GjZ Gjfi EBdhz

¹⁰ ShBW FBdh, “gFd ShciY bhZjUc, MmBW
 YochCW Ac bifci EFdc AS ThFi Sjbchcm AMhU
 FcLpWz ¹¹ EGW Abi WiMmE ZjMiAc, gFd UmZShc
 KhBSm bhZjUC bghWz FhcW bifciØm MmSh
 ZmXhc dBA Sjbchc ZicjÐm ZhghUlci FcSh,
 BShc FZMh ThFi ShBWC Sjbchcm ZhKhBLpWz”
¹² ZhUm bjLhc gCc fjABZm Aèhc Whbm MhdhBd
 FjcZhWi Ac gFd MhSc FjcZhWi MjBS Fci dBA
 ABdhz gmfm ghcjW Ac ZWi BLchBdc bjcäi Efd
 ABA, bjLhc gCcc dHm ZBA Aèhc LhbWm GhWh-
 XiWh GhBdhz

gMcS fjABZm (A:) UhbhW bjLhcm Xchbif Uidh

¹³ ZhUc UiW bjLhD bhWfc ZiKhc-fhdif FchS
 ZBdhz ZiKhcc dhHi bhWjf ABA ZiAW ThFi ghBÕh
 XcMØ ghch UiW ShW LhbWm CZhB cBdhz
¹⁴ bjLhD Edh Fch UmGiA ShW gCcm FBdh, “Sjbi
 bhWfcm dBA BSh FiSh FchD? FiShc dhHi Sjbi

DFdh EWE ZiKhcE ZBL, Ac ZiAW ThFi ghBÕh
XcMØ gFd bhWjf Sjbhc HmLm CZhB cBLm?”

¹⁵ bjLhD MjAX Uidh, “ZiKhcc ZmXhcm AèhB
YDLhdh gjWhc dhHi bhWjf Abhc HmLm ABWz

¹⁶ Shch FjWj FhBÌh-YLhU Fcdm Abhc FhLhS ABW,
ABdm Abi ULBE Udc ZiKhc Fci, Ac AèhB gjFjb-
AgFhb Shchcm ZhShBz”

¹⁷ SmC bjLhc gCcm FBdh, “Sjbi MmdhGhW BSh
FcchD, BSh S ahdh WhDz ¹⁸ Bdh Fcdm Sjbi Ac
Sjbhc gFd bhWjfe Fhgid EBMiZhDz B Fhb Sjbhc
ShÀs ThFi Zmfi, Sjbi DFdh BSh FjdhBShD XhcShD
WhDz ¹⁹ Sm Abi Sjbhcm FBac, Sjbi Abhc Xchbif
gjWE, DSm AèhE Sjbhc dHm cBZhz Sjbi bhWfc
ZiKhc-AKhc YDLhdh Fchc WiESm, Shchc Bbhb
gifhZm gFd ZmXhc Aèhc LhbWm AMic FciEz ²⁰ Ac
bhWfcmE Aèhc gjFjb-AgFhb Shdib UiEz Shch Fidh
KdSh, FiSh FcSh Wh FcSh, ESh Shchcm ZjMhBEz
²¹ Ac Sjbi Dchc bhM ThFi ZhLiA ECdh MBHÔHiE bh-
Wjf Zhc FcE, Mmch Aèhcm QchBW, gF XTm KdpW,
Ac Ijf GhEAcM IiW FcpWz Dchcm Sjbi bhWfc

ZiKhc-AKhcc UhDBÍ UmEz Dch FjWj MWcm AMhc
MWc CXcm, FmCccm f MW, FmCccm XBÓhf MW,
Ac FmCccm UfMWc CXcm ZiKhc-AKhcc ahc UmEz

²² DchC ghbmfh bhWfc ZiKhc-BWLhY FcZhz gjcj-
bjcj gFd ZiKhc Shch FcZh, Ghdi Ze Ze ZiKhc Sjbhc
HmLm AWZhz SmC Sjbhc ahc FiLj FbZ, ShchE
Sjbhc dHm FiLj ahc ZCÀhz ²³ Aèhc gjFjb XhBA Sjbi
MjUi ECdh FcE, Sm Sjbi FjdhBShD XhcZhD, Ac
bhWfcmE Achbm MhcMic MhHhS MhBSh XhcZhZ”

²⁴ bjLhD ShW gCcc Xchbif bhWdh, ShBW Mmdh
FBdh, bjLhD ECdh Fedhz ²⁵ bjLhD Shbhb ZWi
BLchBd ThFi ZhLiA CXMjÃ bhWjf SjFhBA, Shch

FmCccm AMhc MW, FmCccm f MW, FmCccm
XBÓhf Ac FmCccm UfMWc CXcm WmSh ZhWhB-
dhz ²⁶ Dch ghbmfh bhWfc ZiKhc-AKhc FcShz Ghdi
Ze Ze IOWh EFd bjLhc FhLhS AWSH, Ac gjcj gjcj
gFdSh Shch biOhBShz

²⁷ gmfm bjLhD ShW gCccm ZiUhD Uidm, ShBW
WiMc UmfE SfcY WidhHiz

bhZjUc dHm ShW ZÛhc bidWc CLièh

19

(19:1-24:18)

ZWi BLchBdm Sjc XheE Aèh XhFc AEAM gjWdh

¹⁻² bifc Umf ThFi ZWi BLchBd EFd ZhcEWic
ZhUm, SiW Wæc KhÛc XDDh UiWC Shch cYiUib
EBA LiWhB bcjajbiS XCLidhz EWE ABA Shch bc-
jajbic Sjc Xhec LhbWm Shæj Hheidhz

³ DcbhMm gMcS bjLh Sjc Xhec CXcm Aèhc
UcZhcE Hmdhz bhZjUm Xhec CXcm ThFi ShWcm
QhFiA FBdh, “E bjLh, Sjbi BAFjZc AEdhU EFdcm
FE, ZWi BLchBdcm MhWhB UmE, ⁴ Abi bhZjUm
bifci EFdc Ufh FiSh IOhBLi, BSh S Shchc WiMc
KCGm UmGLpWz Kidm Mmdh Shc ZhBóhcm QhG-
WhUi ZBA WmD, AbiE EC WbjWhD Sjbchem Abhc
HmLm ZBA AWLiz ⁵ EGW Sjbch MjUi Abhc Shbhb
gjFjb-AgFhb bhWE, Ac Abhc dHc EAUh AUhD FcE,
Sm UIWiAc gAd MhSic bhM ThFi SjbchC EBZhD
Abhc GhL fâUz bWE chGiE, ghch UIWiAc gFdShC
Abhc DGSiAcEz ⁶ Sjbchem UiAC FhBb EBZ Abhc
Bbhb EFdc ZhUfhB, SjbchC EBZhD Abhc XZiï Mh-
Siz Sm Abhc EC ZjdiGhWhpW Sjbi ZWi BLchBdcm
MhWhEz”

⁷ EC bjLhD ABA ZWi BLchBdc bjcäi EFdcm Udh FchBdhz Udh FchBA FBdh, bhZjUm ShWcm FiSh FiSh gjFjb UiLpWz ⁸ SmC gFd bhWfm DFdHm FBdh, “bhZjUm Mmdh ZhShBLpW, Abch Edh gÀdsh Fcbjz” bhWfm MmbWm MjAX Uidh, bjLhD HiA bhZjUc UcZhce Edh MhWhBdhz ⁹ Ac bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Abi MmZdh Sjbhc dHm ZhSKiS Fcbj, EC ZhSKiS MhSm bhWfm WiMc FhWm gjWS Xhcm, DcdhHi Abi IW DF bmIc KhFhc bhMm cBA ZhSKiS Fcbjz SmC bhWfm BSh gjWZh, Ac Sjbhc CXcm gc-ghbmfh XjchXjc DFiW chGZhz”

ZhUm bjLh HiA Shchce gFd FTh bhZjUcm MhWhBdhz ¹⁰ BGhW gjWiA bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Sjbi ABM Ac FhBd UlBE UiW bhWfc FhLhS HiA Shchcm XhF-LhY FcEz Shch MhcMic FhXe-KjXe VBA UmCFz ¹¹ Shch Xcfj UiWc dhHi SpAc ECF, EC UiW Abi bhZjU SjC Xhec CXcm dhbiA ABA Shch gFdcm UiUhc Uibjz ¹² Sm Sjbi Xhec KhBceZhd DFOh fibhWh PiF FciA UidhEz UiA Shchcm gjfiAc Fci FE, Shch MhWj B XheE Wh Cpm Ac Xhec fibhWhS Wh LDz FmC MjUi B XheE LD, Sm Shc fhMh EBd bCSz ¹³ bhchc Zhdh Shc HSce AS Wh UiA, Shcm XhÍc Zh Sic bhciA bhczhdz gm bhWjf ECF Zh MhWjAc ECF Shcm bhcidizhdz Ghdi DFdHm ZCS fbD fiqHh ZhMhWic AEAM gjWdm, Shch EC Xhec FhÙhs ABSH XhcZhz”

¹⁴ SmC bjLhD XheE ThFi dhbiA ABA bhWfcm XhF-LhY Fcdh, bhWfm Shchc FhXe-KjXe VBA Uidz ¹⁵ bjLhD Shchcm FBdh, “Sjbch Xcfj UiWc dhHi MjBS EE, DcbhMm FmC ZiZic dHm bidhbifh FciE Whz” ¹⁶ ghLhC gC Xcfj UiW ABdm ZiAWFj Zhdh Xhec CXcm Aèhc FjUcSi bmIc KhFh UmGh Hmd,

GjZ Zmfi bmIc QhF-MidFhWi fjcj EBdz Mjcm Mjcm fiqHhc AEAM gjWh Hmd, SmC ZWi BLchBdc Fmâc aiScc gFd bhWjf QchBA FhXh Vcdhz ¹⁷ EC fbD bjLhD bhWfcm Aèhc LhbWm WmEAc dhHi Fmâ ThFi Zhc Fcdhz Shch gFd HiA Xhec dhhbS CZhBdhz ¹⁸ Ac Aîh Sjc Xhe VjbhD aciHmd, bhZjU bCdhD AHjWic dhGhW Wjcc LjcSm Xhec CXcm SfcY AWdhz BO-ahOôhc Vjbhc dhGhW Vjbh Ceh fjcj EBD Ac Aîh Xhe Mjei ZmMjBSH FhX fjcj EBdz ¹⁹ fiqHhc AEAM AcE Mjcm Mjcm ZhMidz EC fbD bjLhD Aèhc dHm bhSidh, Ac AèhDE WiMc AEAMUi bjLhc bhSc MjAX Uidhz

²⁰ bhZjU WiMm Sjc Xhec bhThS dhbiA ABA bjLhcm QhFidh, SmC bjLh CPiA Xhec CXcm Hmdhz ²¹ HiA ghcdm bhZjUm ShWcm FBdh, “Sjbi dhhbS MhE, HiA bhWfcm Feh Fci FBA AE, AcWhD Abhcm UmGhc dhHi Shch fibhWh XhcEBA CXcm ABâhz ABdm ZCS bhWjf bhch MhBZhz ²² Ac Mm Bbhb Efd ghbmfh Abhc LhbWm AMic EBW, ALdm Shche FhbC Abhc LhbWm AMic EA, Shche WiMm WiMcm XhF-LhY FcZhz AcWhD Abi Shche CXcmE HMZ Rhdibjz”

²³ bjLhD bhZjUcm MjAX Uidh, “Shch S DbWmC Sjc XheE ABSH WhD, AXWm AHmC Abchcm Feh gjfiAci UiLpWz AbchE Xhec KhBcEZhd UhH UiA AXWhc dhHi XhF fibhWh AdHhBLiz”

²⁴ EBdm bhZjUm ShWcm FBdh, “Wh, Sjbi dhhbS MhEz ZhUm Sjbi Ac ghejW UlBEMWm bidiA CXcm ABEz GiAd chGiE, FjWj Bbhb Zh ULLch FjWj bhWjf MhSm fibhWh LheiA Abhc FhLhS Wh ABW, ABdm Abi Shche CXcm dhÛsi HMZ Rhdbjz”

²⁵ BGhW gjWiA bjLh dhhbS Hmdh, HiA bhWfcm gFdSh MhWhBdhz

20

Aèhc KicFhdiW GhL Uf gjFjb

¹ ZhUm bhZjUm YcbhBdh, ² “E ZWi BLchBd Efd, Abi Aèhc Sjbchc bhZjUz bifc Umfc Hjdhibi ThFi AbiC Sjbchem Zhc Fci AWLiz

³ “Abhc ZUdh Sjbch ULLch FjWj UmZSh bhWiE Whz

⁴ “Sjbch XjMh Fchc WiESm FjWj UmZSh ZhWhBE Whz ALbhWc FjØhc dhGhW, MbiWc FjØhc dhGhW Zh XhWic bhMc FjØhc dhGhW FjWj UmZSh ZhWhBE Whz ⁵ bWE chGiE, Ghdi Abi Aèhc Sjbchc bhZjUz Abhc XhEWh DZhUS Abi KhBz DcdhHi Sjbch BShc XjMh FciE Wh, GmMbSE FciE Whz gjWE, Mmch Abhc ZicjÐm HjWh Fcm, Abi Shchc HjWhc Yd Shchc SiW-KhBc GhÜhw XcMØ ZcShBz ⁶ EBdm Mmch Abhc Afif ZWiA Abhc gjFjb-AgFhb Abd Fcm, Abi Shchc AMhc AMhc EAcif XcMØ Abhc EZichb bhDA-bgäs UmGhBbjz

⁷ “ZmFhbh FjWj FhcWm Sjbchc Aèh bhZjUc Whb bjGE dBE Whz FmC MjUi GhbGh bhZjUc Whb dD, Sm FjWjBØmC Abhc fhMh ThFi cmghB XhBS WhDz

⁸ “BAU FciA Mjçhzhccm XZiï UiW bhWiEz ⁹ Sjbch ghßhs LD UiW Fhb FciE, MhcMic gFd Fhb AUhD FciE, ¹⁰ EBdm fhS Wæc UiW EBd MjçhZhc, Sjbhc Aèh bhZjUc Whbm MichBZhc UiWz B UiW Sjbi, Sjbhc XjA-XjeiW, Sjbhc Hjdhb-ZhÜiw, Sjbhc Hcj-HhVhBW, Sjbhc HhCS Zh OhCWE cEch bjLhYic Zh aiW-Umfi, FmC FjWj MhSc Fhb-FhM FciE Whz ¹¹ MhWE S, bhZjUm LD UiWm ALbhW-MbiW, UciA Ac Dchc bhMc gFdSh XDUh FcLpW, ZhUm fhS

Wæc UiW MichBLpW, FjWj Fhb FcLpW Whz EC
UiWcm bhZjUm cgbS UiA XhF UiW FcLpWz

¹² “Sjbchc bh-ZhYcm BÌs FciEz SmC Sjbchc Aèh
bhZjUm Mm Umf UiZh, gC UmfE Sjbchc ghDASi
ZheiZz

¹³ “GjW FciE Whz

¹⁴ “MiWh FciE Whz

¹⁵ “Kjci FciE Whz

¹⁶ “FmCcc ZicjÐm biLh fhÀi UiE Whz

¹⁷ “EBÛ bhWfc Ic-ULAcc ZhD dhdK FciE Wh,
Shchc ZC, Hjdhb-ZhÛi, Hcj-HhVh, Zh FjWj FiËjc
ZhD dhdK FciE Whz”

¹⁸ ZWi BLchBdm MmZdh Xhe ThFi bmIc QhF,
MidFhWi, fiqHhc AEAM, Ac Vjbh ZhcEWiS
UmGdh, UmGiA Shch UlcB ThFiC QchBA FhXh
Vcdhz ¹⁹ Shch bjLhcm FBdh, “AXWmC Abchc
dHm bhSCÀh, Abch gjWbj; EBdm AèhD Abchc
dHm ZhSKiS Fcdm S Abch bciMibjz”

²⁰ bjLhD Shchcm FBdh, “Sjbch QchBE Whz AèhD
Sjbchcm XciÀhs YhdhBLpW, MhSm Sjbchc MhWE
Aèhc Qc ghbhD, QchBA Sjbch HjWh ThFi ZhKiA
cEz DcdhHiC ShBW WiMm UiUhc UiLpWz”

²¹ gFd bhWjf UlcB CZhB cBdh, Ac bjLh AèhB gC
bmIc FhdWic AÛhcic bhMm ghbhBdhz

Aèhc dHm bidWc CLièhc fcr

(F) FjcZhWi GhWh ZhWhWi

²² bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Sjbi ZWi BLchBdcm
FE, Sjbch WiMmC S UmGdhD, Abi bhZjUm ALbhW
ThFi Sjbchc dHm ZhSKiS Fcdhbz ²³ DcdhHi DZhUS
Fche WiESm, Abhc ZUdh ULLch FjWjMhS UmZSh

ZhWhBE Whz Sjbch fjWh Zh cjXhUiE WiMc FjWj
UmZ-UmZi ZhWhBE Whz

²⁴ “Abhc dhHi Ghdi bhOi UiA FjcZhWi GhWh
ZhWhBEz Dc CXcm Sjbchc MhdhBd FjcZhWi Ac
LhdhbSi FjcZhWic Hcj-LhHd AWiA FjcZhWi UiEz
MmSh MhHhBØE Abi Abhc Whb BAU FchB Uibj,
gC MhHhBØE Abi WiMm AMic EBA Sjbchem ULA
Uibjz ²⁵ Sjbch Abhc dhHi XhÍcUi FjWj FjcZhWi
GhWh ZhWhWiS dhHdm, gi XhÍcHjBW FhOiE Whz
Dc CXcm ASiAc KhdhBdm Sjbch BShcm WhXhF
ZhWhBdiZhDz ²⁶ Abhc FjcZhWi GhWh ECdh Fci
ZhWhBE, MhSm Dc CXcm CPSm FjWj bB Zh Liei
Wh dhHmz FhcW Liei ZhD CPhS Hmdm FiZh
Sjbchc dobOh UmGh MhBZz”

21

Aèhc dHm bidWc CLièhc fcr

(G) GciUh ZhÛi-Hjdhbc ZmXhcm

¹ bhZjUm bjLhem AcE FBdh, “Sjbi ZWi BLchB-
dcm Abhc EC WiEb-FhWjW EFd MhWhEz

² “Sjbch MjUi FjWj BZchWi ZmOhcm GciU FciA
Hjdhb ZhWhE, Sm EC Hjdhbm LD ZLc Sjbchc Hjd-
hbi FcZ, ZhUm fhS ZLcc Zhdh Shc HmL ThFi FjØh
Wh WiA, Shcm DbWmC AMhU Fci UiZhDz ³ gm
MjUi DFdh Sjbchc HmLm AD Sm DFdhC MhBZ;
Ac MjUi ZCcm dHm dBA AD, Sm ZC dBA MhBZz
⁴ EBdm Shc bjWiZm MjUi Shcm ZiA FchB ThFm,
Ac Shc FjWj gjcÍh-bjcsSh EBW, ShBdm B ZmOi Ac
gjcÍhpW bjWiZc HmLmC cBZh; gm Ghdi DFdh
AMhU EBZz ⁵ Ac gi Hjdhbm MjUi LhY Fci FD MmW,
gm Shc bjWiZ, Ac Shc ZC-ZhBóhc bhDAD, Dchem

LheiA MhBS WhD, ⁶ Sm B bhdiFm Shcm dBA Aèhc UcZhcE AMic EBZz Shcm UIAcc FXhO Zh KCFhPc dHm CZh FciA bjWiZm fiF UiA Shc FhWE Ykc FcZz SmC gm ghch MiÙnHi ac bjWiZc HjdhibiS cBZz

⁷ “FjWj bhWfm MjUi ZhÙiHiciS UiZhc dhHi Shc WiMc Xjeicm ZmKidhD, Sm Hjdhb EFd Mmdh LD ZLc ZhUm bjWiZc Zhei ThFi DbWmC AMhU EBMhBW, EC Xjei S Bdh AMhU EBS WhDz ⁸ ShBc bjWiZ MjUi ShBc CXcm Gjfi Wh EBW, Sm OmFh-XDfhc ZUdh ShBcm AMhU Fci UiSm EBZz ShBcm ULLch FjWj MhSic bhWfc HmLm ZmKiZhc DGSiAc WhB, FhcW bjWiZm S ShW WiMc UhDBÍ AUhD FcLpW Whz ⁹ EBdm bjWiZm MjUi ShW WiMc XjAc dhHi ShBcm XLÙ FciA WmBW, Sm ShBcm AXW Xjeic dhGhW gFd GmbSh UiSm EBZz ¹⁰ bjWiZm MjUi EC ZhÙicm ZiA Fchc ZhUm, ULLch FjWj FBÙhcm ZiA Fcm, Sh-E B ZhÙic GjchFi, FhXe-KjXe Ac fcide XhEWh gF ShBcm UmEA dhHZz ¹¹ gm MjUi EC SiWE gF XjchXjc AUhD Wh Fcm, Sm B Xjeicm DFUb ZiWh XDfhD AMhU Fci UiSm EBZz

Aèhc dHm bidWc CLièhc fcr

(H) bhch-bhcic fhMh

¹² “bhBc GhBA MjUi FjWj bhWjf bciMhD, Sm MmHiD Shcm bhcLm, ShcmE FhSd FcSm EBZz ¹³ EBdm gm WiMm MjUi GjW Wh Fchc WiESm bhcm, AGSh FjWj FhcWm IOiMhD Zh Abi Aèhc bcMiD BSh ED, Sm EC GjWi MW HiA Edh FjWj MhHhS ahHiS XhcZ, Mm MhHhc FTh Abi Sjbchcm FBbjz ¹⁴ Ac FmC MjUi MhWiA-gjWiA BÈh Fci FmC-cm GjW FciA, ZhUm ABA Abhc FjZhw GhWhc

HmLmE AfcD dD, Sh-E gW ThFi Vci WiA Shcm
FhSd FcSm EBZz

¹⁵ “Mm bhWfm Shc AXW bh Zh ZhYc CXcm AS
Sjdm, Shcm WiKD FhSd FcSm EBZz

¹⁶ “FmC MjUi FjWj bhWfcm Kjci FciA AWiA
ZmKidhD, Zh EC bhWfcm Shc HmLm XhEA MhD,
Sm Shcm WiKD FhSd FcSm EBZz

¹⁷ “Mm bhWfm AXW bh Zh ZhYcm Hhdi-HhdhM
Fcm, ShcmE WiKD FhSd FcSm EBZz

¹⁸ “FjWj bhWfm FhBÌhs dhHiA MjUi dHc MWcm
Pkfi Zh XhÍcUi bhcm, B bhBc GhBA EC MW Wh
bcdmE ZiLWhS gjSiA XeWE ThFm, ¹⁹ gmfm CpiA
dhPi ac UiA Kdh-Yich Fchc Mcjc ED, Sm MmHiD
Shcm bhclm Shcm FhSd FciE Whz Ghdi gC MWc
Fhb-FhMc GmSi Ac Shc fjèAWh UhEAB GcK UiSm
EBZz

²⁰ “FmC MjUi Shc GciUh Hjdhb-ZhÙicm dhPi
UiA bhcm Ac bhBc GhBA EHj bciMhD, Sm Dcm
fhMh UiSm EBZz ²¹ EBdm bhBc GhEAc UIB-DFUiW
ZhUm MjUi ZhKiA cD, Sm FjWj fhMh UmEA dhHS
WhD, FhcW EC Hjdhb S Shc WiMc LhbhWh ALidz

²² “bhch-bhci FchS dhHiA MjUi AGSh FmC FjWj
ZmOicm bhcm Ac ShBc XmOc ZhBóh Wi EBMhD,
EBdm Ac FjWj GmSi Wh ED, Sm EC ZmOic MhbhBc
UhZi Ac ZiKhci-fhdifc ZiZmKWh bhYiF Dcm GmSi-
XjcW UiSm EBZz ²³ EBdm MjUi ShBc AcE FjWj
GmSi ED, ShBdm Dcm EC dhGhW fhMh UiZhD;
²⁴ MhWc ZUdh MhW, KCGc ZUdh KCG, UhSc ZUdh
UhS, ASc ZUdh AS, XhEc ZUdh XhE, ²⁵ MhdhWic
ZUdh MhdhWi, MGbc ZUdh MGb, UhHc ZUdh UhH
UiSm EBZz

²⁶ “FmC MjUi Shc GciUh Hjdhb Zh ZhÙic FjWj
KGjS bhchD KCG Wi EBMhD, Sm EC KCGc ZUdh
gm B Hjdhbcm AMhU Fci UiSm EBZz ²⁷ MjUi bhciA

Dc UhS YhdhB UmD, Sh-E Dcm AMhU Fci UmEA dhHZz

²⁸ “FjWj HcjD HjShBA MjUi FjWj ZmOh Zh ZmOicm bhcidhD, Sm Hcjc bhdiFcm FjWj fhMh UmEA dhHS WhDz Ghdi gi Hcjcm FhJFeUi BO-hBA bhciDiSm EBZ, B Hcjc Hjî FmC GhBS XhcS WhDz ²⁹ EBdm B Hcjc MjUi ghbmfh ECdh HjShWic GhBËS ThFm, Ac gi bhdiFcm gjfiAc Fchc ZhUmE gm BOhcm AOFhD Wh, DcbhMm B HcjD FjWj ZmOh Zh ZmOicm bhcidhD, Sm B Hcjcm FhJFe bhciA bhciDiSm EBZ, Ac Shc bhdiFcmE bhciDiSm EBZz ³⁰ MjUi B bhdiFc HmLm FjWj GmSi-XjcW KhEA ED, ShBdm gm EC McibhWh UiA WiMc MhW ZhKhBS XhcZz ³¹ B HcjD MjUi FjWj gjcjlhcm HjShBA bhcidhD, ShBdm DcdhHiE EC gbhW WiEb EBZz ³² FjWj HcjD MjUi FmCcc Hjdhb Zh ZhÛicm HjShBA bhcidhD, ShBdm Hcjc bhdiFm gi Hjdhbc bhdiFcm Sif Sdh XcibhW cjXh UiSm EBZ Ac gi HcjcmE FhJFe bhci bhciDiSm EBZz

³³ “FmC MjUi FjWj HhSc bjG GjdiA TD Zh HhS GjUiA BHjc bjG HjiA Wh TD, Ac B HhSc aiScm FjWj Hcj Zh HhVh XeiMhD, ³⁴ ShBdm HhSc bhdiFm Xfjc bhdiFcm GmSi-XjcW UiSm EBZz EBdm B bch Xfj XhBZ HhSc bhdiFmz

³⁵ “FmCcc HcjD MjUi AcF MWc Hcjcm HjShBA bhcidhD, Sm gC MiSh Hcjcm ZmKiA, Dc Uhb Ac bch Hcjc UhbE Dch UlBEMWm gbhW-gbhW Fci ZhOiA WiZhz ³⁶ EBdm AH ThFi MjUi MhWhgjWh ThFm MmW, B HcjD Edh HjShD, Ac Shc bhdiFm Shcm Wh AOFhD, Sm Hcjc ZUdh Hcj UiSm EBZ, ZUdh UmEch MWm EC bch HcjOh XhBZz

22

Aèhc dHm bidWc CLièhc fcr

(I) GmSi-XjcWc WiEb

¹ “FmC FjWj bhWfc Hcj Zh bmeh-LhHd Kjci FciA AWiA MjUi ZmKidhD Zh MZE FcidhD, Sm DF Hcjc ZUdh XhKHj, DF bmeh Zh LhHdc ZUdh KhBcHj YicS UiSm EBZz ²⁻⁴ Kjcm Shc Kjcic bhdc GmSi-XjcW UiSm EBZ, EBdm Shc MjUi GmSi-XjcW UiZhc FjWj ShÀs Wh ThFm, Sm Shcm ZmKiA Dc GmSi-XjcW AUhD FcSm EBZz Kjci Fch Hcj-HhVh Zh bmeh-LhHd MjUi Kjcc HmLm MiSh XhEA MhD, ShBdm gm BSh DHjc ZUdh ULHj YicS UiSm EBZz

“FjWj Kjcm MjUi KjciS HiA IcE ghbhBZhc Zhdh Vch GhBdhD Ac MGB EBA bciMhD, ShBdm Shcm bhchc dhHi bhccch MW UhDB EBS WhDz EBdm fjcjM CPhc ZhUm MjUi UiWc Zhdh Bdh ED, Sm B GjWc dhHi gm UhDB EBZz

⁵ “FmC MjUi Shc Hcj-LhHd WiMc ZhHhWE Zh GmSc bhMm chGhS HiA Lhei UmD, Ac BShD HiA bhWfc GmSc Yfd GhBdhD, Sm Shc WiMc GmSc gFd ThFi ahdh Ejf ZUdh UiA GmSi-XjcW UiSm EBZz

⁶ “FjWj MhHh ThFi AHjBW dhHiA MjUi MjX-MJHd Mdm, Ac ZhUm EC AHjBW HiA FmCcc GmSc bhMm ZhÙh bjBO, OmFi Zh Aîh GmS MdiMhD, Sm AHjBW MmHiD MhdhBLid, gm BShc GmSi-XjcW UiZz

⁷ “FmC MjUi AcFMWc HmLm bhd-LhbbWh Zh OmFh-XDfh AbhWS TD, Ac AbhWSUhc Ic ThFi BSh Kjci EBMhD, Sm EC Kjc Vch Xedm, Kjcm Dc QhZjd YicS UiZz ⁸ EBdm Kjc Vch Wh Xedm, gi Icc bhdiFm WiMmC BSh djFhBLm Wi, EGhW MhWhc dhHi Shcm Aèhc UcZhcE AMic FcZhDz

⁹ “AcF MWc UGdE ALm, ECdh FjWj Hcj-HhVh, bmeh-LhHd, YiÛc FhXe Zh MmFjWj AchBd Lhb-hWh UmGiA FmC MjUi bWE Fcm BOh Shc bhd, ShBdm BOhc fhdific dhHi Shch ULBEMW HiA Aèhc UcZhcE AMic EBZz AèhD Mhcm Ulfi fhBZî FcZh, gm Shc ZicjVi MWcm Dc QhZjd YicS UiZz

¹⁰ “FmC MjUi Shc Hcj-HhVh, LhHd-bmeh Zh EBÛ FjWj Xfjcm FjWj Hicîc HmLm chGhS UmD, Ac EHj bciMhD, MGb EBMhD Zh AchB MhD, EBdm Dc FjWj fhÀi Wh bidm, ¹¹ Sm EC Hicîm WiMmC MmW BSh FcLm Wh, BOh gm bhZjUc LhbWm HiA FLb FciA biObhO FcZz B Xfjc bhdiFmE BGhW bhWSm EBZ, ShBW FjWj GmSi-XjcW XhBSh WhDz ¹² EBdm B Hicîc HmL ThFi MjUi BOh Kjci EBMhD, Sm bhd-iFm GmSi-XjcW XhBZz ¹³ MjUi FjWj MJdi MhW-jAcm Vci BHjcm bhcidhD, ShBdm Dc XcbhWc dhHi EHjc Yheh-Lieh OjFchBW AWiA UmGhWi dhHZz SmC Dc FjWj GmSi-XjcW dhHS WhDz

¹⁴ “FmCcc HmL ThFi GjMiA AWh FjWj Xfj MjUi bhdiFc AYcGm MGb ED Zh bciMhD, Sm MmBW GjMiA AWLpW, DBW Dc GmSi-XjcW UiZhz ¹⁵ EBdm bhdiFc LhbWmC MjUi ECdh ED, Sm GmSi-XjcW dhHS WhDz B Xfj MjUi OmFh UiA aheh Fci AWh ED, Sm EC ahehc OmFhC EBZ Dc GmSi-XjcWz

Aèhc dHm bidWc CLièhc fcr

(K) fbhMc ZmXhcm

¹⁶ “ZiAc AF&S EBLm Wh ECdh FjWj fSi Xjeicm FmC MjUi biLh bhSiA AWiA ShBc dHm MiWh FcidhD, ShBdm gC ZmOhD Xjeic ZhYcm Mcib-hWh UiA EC Xjeicm ZiA FcSm EBZz ¹⁷ EBdm Xjeic ZhYo MjUi Shc Xjeicm B XjAc HmLm ZiA UiSm

FjWj bØmC chMi Wh ED, Sh-E B McibhWh UiSm
EBZz

¹⁸ “FjWj MhUlHic ZmOicm Sjbi MiSh chGiE Whz

¹⁹ “FjWj Xfjc dHm FmC MiWh Fcdm, Shcm WiKD
FhSd FcSm EBZz

²⁰ “Ghdi bhZjU Lheh Ullch FjØhc Whbm MjUi
FmC FjWj Zdi-XfhU UmD, Sm ShcmE fmf FcidSm
EBZz

²¹ “FjWj aiW-Umfi bhWfc dHm ZhU ZmZghc
FciE Wh, Shcm Mj djb FciE Whz bWE chGiE, SjbchE
DF fbD bife UmfE bjLhYic ALdhDz

²² “FjWj ehei ZmOicm Zh FjWj DSib gjc jĪhcm ULG
UiE Whz ²³ Shchcm ULG Uidm Shch MjUi FhÛm,
Sm B FhÛw WiKD Abi FZjd Fcbjz ²⁴ DSm Abhc
HjLh EBZ AHjBW ZchZcz Sjbch MjÐS XeiA bcZhD,
Sjbchc ZCE ehei EBZ, Sjbchc gjc jĪhpWE ECdh DSib
EBZhz

²⁵ “Sjbch MjUi Abhc FjWj EahZi ZÛhcm FcM
UmE, ShBdm fjUGjcc dhGhW Shc HmL ThFi fjU
WiE Whz ²⁶ FmCcc HSecc KhÐc ZÛF chGdm, fjc jM
QkZhc AHmC Shc KhÐc YicS UidhBEz ²⁷ FhcW
Ceizhc dhHi EOhC Shc DFbhĪ fædz BGhW WidmHi
gm FiSh CeiA gjSiZ? gjWE, gm MjUi Abhc HmLm
FhÛm, Sm Abi S cgbhWjc cgib, Abi Shc FhÛw
gjWbjCz

²⁸ “Sjbi Aèhc ZicjÐm bhSiE Wh, Sjbch FjWj
ZiKhcF-fhdifcmE ZUULA UiE Whz

²⁹ “Sjbchc GmSc Yfd Zh AJHjcc fcZSc Mm ZhO
Abhcm UiZhc FTh, Abhc B ZhO UiSm Umci FciE
Whz Sjbch gFdc Ze XjApW Abhcm UidhBZhDz
³⁰ SjbchC Hcj-ZhLjc Ac LhHd-bmehc dhHiE EC DF
fbhW gjFjBz BShc gFd Ze bmUh ZhBóhBW fhSUiW

XcMØ Shchc bh'c HmLm cBZh, AO UiWc UiW Ab-
hcm UidhBZhDz

³¹ “SjbchC EBZhd Abhc XhF-XZiï ZÙhz MJdi Mh-
WjAcm bhciA YhdhBLm, Bdh FjWj MhWUhc Hjì
Sjbch GhBE Wh; BSh FjFjccm GhEABEz

23

Aèhc dHm bidWc CLièhc fcr

(L) gF ZiKhc Fch

¹ “Sjbch biLh FjWj ZUWhb Zhc FciE Whz XÀXhSi
Fci biLh fhÀi UiA FjWj GZiL bhWfcm fhBì FciE
Whz ² fbhMc UfMWm EBÙhd Fcmc UmGiA SjbìE
ECdh FciE Whz FjWj bhbdh-bFÐbhç fhÀi UmEAS
HiA, fÃiAdh Udc XÀ dBA EBÙhd Fhb FciE Whz ³ Ac
FjWj HciZc ZiKhcE HiA, gm HciZ HSiFmC Shc XÀ
dBE Whz

⁴ “Sjbhc UlfbWc FjWj Hcj-HhVhcm Zm-XTm
MhEAS UmGdm, BOh YichBA AWiA Shc HmLm
UiEz ⁵ Sjbhcm BJfhD Bdh FjWj bhWfc HhVhcm
ahcc Sdm XeiHmLm UmGdm, Shcm Bdh YhdhBA
MhBE Whz Shcm Sjdhs Sjbì EZBfsB fhBì FcZhDz

⁶ “FjWj HciZc bhbdh-bFÐbhs EBÙhd fhdiFi FciE
Whz ⁷ ghMhBd biLh bhbdh ThFi gciA cBEz FjWj
ZmFLjc Zh Wi-EXchVi bhWfcm bCSc fhMh UiE
Whz MmHiD Bdh EBÙhd FcZ, Shcm Abi LheShb
WhDz ⁸ Ijf GhBE Wh, FhcW Ijfm KCGadh bh-
WfcmE AÙh FcidhDz Ijfm ahdh bhWfc bhSc bh-
MmE XmK dhHhB UmDz

⁹ “FjWj aiW-Umfi bhWfc CXcm Mjdjb FciE Whz
bjLhYicc ghd-gFiFS S Sjbch MhWE, FhcW SjbchE
bifc UmfE bjLhYic ALdhDz

*Aèhc dHm bidWc CLièhc fcr**(M) MjçhZhc Ac Achb Fchc WiEb*

¹⁰ “Sjbch DF dhHhcm LD ZcL MbiWE GmS FciE Ac Yfd FhOiE, ¹¹ ZhUm fhS Wæc ZcLE MbiWE FjWj GmS Wh FciA XSiS chGiE, MbiWcm Achb UiEz DSm MbiWE DbWmC MmSh YdiZ, ESh Sjbchc HciZ EFdm GhBA ZhKiZhz Shch WmEAc ZhUm MmSh Xei cBZ, BSh MJdi Xfj-XhGiØm GhBZhz Sjbchc AJHjcc ZhHhW Zh MDSjW ZhHhWc dhHiE EC gjFjb bhWiEz

¹² “Sjbch ghßhs LD UiW Fhb FciE, EBdm fhS Wæc UiW S MjçhZhc, BUiW FjØh FciE Whz SmC Sjbchc Hcj-HhVhD MichBZh, Ac Sjbchc ZheiS MWbiLm B Hjdhb Ac bjLhYic EFdc MhWmE Achb XhBZz

¹³ “Abi Sjbchcm MmSh gjFjb Uidhb, BSh GjZ gjfiAc EBA Abd FciEz FjWj UmZShc Whb bjGE dBE Wh, BShc Whb MhWj Sjbchc bjGE Wh gjWh MhDz

*Aèhc dHm bidWc CLièhc fcr**(N) BUc ZmXhcm*

¹⁴ “Sjbch XcSmF ZcL SiWZhc Abhc Whbm BU AUhD FciEz ¹⁵ XDdh, Ghbic Lheh cjoic BU AUhD FciEz Abi Mmdh gjFjb FcLi, DÀmcm EC dhGhW AZiZ KhÛc fhSUiW Ghbic Lheh cjoI GhBE, FhcW EC KhÛE Sjbch bific ThFi ZhcBA ABLdhDz BUc fbD dièh-LUhh Lheh Sjbchc FmC MhWj Ghdi ASm Abhc HmLm Wh ADz ¹⁶ ULlch, Sjbch Yfd UHEAc BU bhWiEz GmSc bhMm Sjbch MmSh cjBL, BSh UHEAc ZhUm XDdh Yfd UiAC BU FciEz SiLch BU, ZLcc gmf KhÛE ZhHhWc XhFWWh Yd ZheiS AWhc ZhUm Shæjc BU FciEz ¹⁷ EC SiWE BUc fbD, ZLcE

SiWZhc Sjbchc gFd ZmOhBW ABA gM Fchc WiESm
Abi Aèh bhdiFc LhbWm AMic EBEz

¹⁸ “Sjbch MmZdh Abhc Whbm Xfj FjcZhWi UmE,
EC fbD GhbicAdh FjWjMhS cjOi BShc dHm XjchBA
dièh UiE Whz BUc fbD Abhc Whbm MmSh Xfj
FjcZhWi UiZhD, BShc KcZiAdh OjFchBW ZiAW
XcMØ chGiE Whz ¹⁹ Sjbchc GmSc gFd ThFi ahdh
Yfd, Sjbchc Aèh bhZjUc IcE AWiEz

“Ac gjWE, FjWj LhHdc ZhBóhc Hjî Shc bh’c ULV
UiA chÜiE Whz

Aèhc gjFjb Ac EAUh

²⁰ “Abi Sjbchc dhHi Mm MhHh MjBS Fci chGLi,
gWE Sjbchem gmYhMSm XCLhWic dhHi, Abi
Sjbchc AHm AHm DFMW Yiciîh XhPhBbjz ²¹ Sjbch
DW FTh bW UiA gjWiE Ac bhWiE, DW dHm S AbiE
ALiz gjfiAc cBE, DW ZicjÐm MhBE Whz AcWhD
DBW Sjbchc EXchV bhY FcSh WhDz ²² EBdm
Sjbch MjUi DW gjFjb bhWE, Ac Abi Mmdh FBLi
ECdh KdE, ShBdm Sjbchc UlfbWc dHm Abi Ulf-
bWi Fcbj, Mmch Sjbchc ZicjÐm dhHZ, Abi Shchc
ZicjÐm dhHbjz ²³ Abjci, giOOi, YhciMi, FmWhWi,
giäi Ac MiZjMi EFdc UmfE Abhc YiciîhD Sjbchem
WiA ghchBZhz Abi Shch gFdOicm ZiWhf Fcidibjz
²⁴ Sjbch Shchc UmZShem XjMh FciE Wh, GmMbSE
FciE Wh, Ac giWc bhWfm MmSh FcpW Sjbch
BSh FciE Whz Sjbch Shchc UmZ-UmZic bjcSiW
Ac Shchc XjMhc b×X Efd ahJHiA Kjcbhc Fci-
diEz ²⁵ Sjbch Ghdi Sjbchc Aèh bhZjU, bhWi Abhc
DZhUS FciEz SmC Sjbchc ciMmFc bhMm cgbS Uibj,
Ac Sjbchc gÀd Zmbhc-AMhc Ulc Fcbjz ²⁶ Sjbchc
UmfE FjWj ZmOic XmOc gjcjîh Wì EBS WhD, FmC
AOGjch cBS WhDz Abi Sjbchem XjchXjc ghDASi

XcMØ ZhKhBA chGbjz ²⁷ Sjbch MS MhSic FhLhS MhBZhD, Shchc Uidc bhMm AH ThFi Abhc Qc-GY XDUh Fcbj, Shchem ZmUifh ZhWhBdibjz Sjbchc gÀd UlfbW GcmUi ahHiZhz ²⁸ giäi, FmWhWi Ac giOOi EFdcm Sjbchc fhbWh ThFi GmUhBZhc dhHi, Abi Sjbchc AHm Fci aiqHjdc Xhd XhPhBbjz ²⁹ EBdm Abi Shch gÀdcm DFB ZLcc aiScm GmUhB-Shb WhD, AcWhD Aîh Umf XSiS cBA MJdi Mh-WjAcm aciMiZh, ZhUm BShD Sjbchem LhShBZhz ³⁰ Abi Aîm Aîm Shchem GmUhBbj, Ac Sjbchc bhWjf ZheiA Aîh Umf AZhU FcZhdz ³¹ Abi Wid UciA ThFi Yidiîwi Umfc fhHc XcMØ, Ac UCFWc bejajbi ThFi YkchS HhJH XcMØ Sjbchc Umfc fibhWh Hhebhz B UmfE Mmch ZfS Fcmc Shchem Sjbchc ASE fXibj, Ac Sjbch Shchem B Umf ThFi GmUhB UiZhDz ³² Shchc dHm Zh Shchc UmZSh EFdc dHm Sjbch FjWj KjÃi FciE Whz ³³ Sjbchc Umfc aiScm Shchem cBZhc UiE Whz AcWhD Shch Sjbchem Abhc HmL ThFi gchBA HjWhc XTm OhWiA WiZHiz Sjbch MjUi Shchc UmZ-UmZic XjMh FcE, ShBdm Wióis SjbchE Shchc YhÛE ghbhBZhDz”

24

Aèhc dHm bidWc CLièh XhFh-XjÃ

¹ bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Sjbi Ac ghcjW, ghcjWc XjApW WhUhZ Ac AZigj, Ac ZWi BLchBdc fíBc MW bjcäi WmSh Abhc HmLm CPiA AEz ABZhc Zhdh Sjbch UlcB ThFi Abchem fBMUh FciEz ² EBdm Ghdi Sjbi DFdh Abhc FhLhS CXcm ABZhD, Ac FmC WhDz Dchc dHm Ac FjWj ZWi BLchBd MhWj Wh CPmz”

³ bjLhD bhWfc HmLm ABA bhZjUc gÀd Fhdhb
 Ac ABW-FhWjW gjWhBdh, BSh gjWiA gFd bh-
 Wfm DFdHm FBdh, “bhZjUm MSSh ZhShBLpW
 BSh gÀdsh Abch bhWbjz” ⁴ bhZjUc ZhShBd gFd
 Fhdhb bjLhD dmGiA TBdhz ZhUc UiW YMcm CPiA
 Xhec dhbhS DGhW FjcZhWi GhWh ZhWhBdh, Ac
 ZWi BLchBdc ZhcE Hjiicm BAU chGhc dhHi ZhcEHj
 GjOh ZhWhBdhz ⁵ ZhUm ShBW ZWi BLchBdc
 MjAW EFdcm XhPhBdh Ac Shch bhZjUc Whbm
 ZCS MhdhBd FjcZhWi Uidh, Ac ZCS ZiLhd MZE
 FciA LhdhbSi FjcZhWiE Uidhz ⁶ bjLhD FjcZh-
 Wic dCc EcVmF WiA FDOh ZhOiS TBdh, Ac ZhFi
 EcVmF WiA FjcZhWi GhWhc CXcm LiOhB Uidhz
⁷ ZhUm ShBW Aèhc dHm bidWc CLièhc WiEb-
 FhWjW dmGh FiShZGhW SidhES Fci bhWfcm
 gjWhBdhz BSh gjWiA bhWfm MjAX Uidh, “Abch
 bhZjUc gFd gjFjb gjWbj, ShBW MSSh FBLpW
 gFdSh bhWbjz” ⁸ EGhW gjWiA bjLhD dC dBA bh-
 Wfc CXcm LiOhBA FBdh, “B dC EBd AèhB bidWc gC
 CLièhc dC, Mm CLièh bhZjUm ShW gFd fcr bhYiF
 Sjbchc dHm ZEABd FcLpWz”

⁹ SmC bjLh, ghcjW, WhUhZ, AZigj Ac ZWi
 BLchBdc fÍBc MW bjcäi WmSh Xhec CXcm CPdhz
¹⁰ Shch WiMc KCGm ZWi BLchBdc Aèh XhFc UiUhc
 UmGdhz Shch UmGdh, Aèhc XhE bjZhcf Sdm
 ALm, KFKFh did bWi XhÍcc SpAci LhOc dhGhW,
 ALbhWc WbjWhD LhYz ¹¹ ZWi BLchBdc bjcäi
 EFdm Aèhcm UmGdmE ShBW Dchcm bhchc dhHi
 AS Sjddh Whz Shch ShW UiUhc XhBdh Ac GhEA-
 UhEA Fcdhz

gMcS bjLh DFdh Aèhc UcZhce cBdh

12 ZhUm bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Sjbi EC Xhec CXcm Abhc FhÙhs AE, ABA FD UiW cEz bhWfcm Shdib UiZhc dhHi Abhc Mm gjFjb-AgFhb XhÍcc CXcm dmGLi, ESh Abi Sjbhcm Uibjz” 13 SmC bjLhD ShW GhUib BCLhcm dHm dBA XheE CPdh, Ac bjLh Aèhc XheE Hmdhz 14 ShBW bjcäi EFdcm FBA Hmdh, “Abch YicS ABZhc AH XcMØ AXWhch Abchc dhHi EWE Zhc KhBZhz ghejW Ac gjc AXWhchc FhLhS ALpW, FjWj FhBÌh-YLhU dhHdm Dchc HmLm MhBZhz” 15 bjLh XheE CPSmC Aìh Xhe bmIc KhFhD HjciHmd, 16 Ac Sjc Xhec CXcm bhZjUc Wjcc SMèi MhBc EBdz LD UiW Aìh Xhe bmIc KhFhD Hjch cBdz fhS Wæc UiW EC bmIc KhFh ThFi bhZjUm bjLhcm QhFidhz 17 ZWi BLchBdm bhZjUc Wjcc SMèi UmGdh, Shch UmGdh Xhec CXcm AHjWic dhGhW Mdmcz 18 Xhe ZhBA CPI-CPI bjLh gC bmIc aiScm ghbhB Hmdhz ShBW Khèif UiW, Khèif chBS gC XheE cBdhz

Aèhc XZiï Ic ZhWhWic gjFjb

25

(25:1-31:18)

Icc bhd-LhbhWh MjHhWic gjFjb

1 bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, 2 “Sjbi ZWi BLchBdcm FE, Shch Abhc HmLm UhW-GDchS dBA AMic ECFz Shchc WiMc GjfiD MmSh UhW FcZh, ESh Sjbi fbMiA chGiEz 3 Shchc HmL ThFi EC dhGhW bhd fbMiE;

fjWh, cjXh, XiSd;

4 did, ZhBJHWi, dhc cJHc fjSh;

Uhbi didmW FhXe Ac LhHdc cjhb;

⁵ dhđ cJH dhHhBđ bmehc Khbeh, Yk'c Khbeh;
ZhZdh dhFei;

⁶ dmb MhdhWic dhHi MDSjWc Smd;
GmdhYSi ZGfiZhc Smdc bfdh Ac AHc-GjfZD Zh-
WhWic bfdh;

⁷ Bbhbc dmZhLc DYcW Ac ZjFc CXcc TdiS dhHh-
Wic AFiF bWi Ac ZhFi gFd MhSc Uhbi XhÍcz

⁸ “Abhc cEAc dhHi Sjbi ZWi BLchBđ EFđcmUi
XhF-XZiİ DGhW MhHh SpAc FchBZhDz SmC Abi
Shhc dHm ZfS Fcbjz ⁹ Abhc cEAc Ic Ac bhđ-
LhbhWhc ZmXhcm Abi Sjbhcm Mmdh WbjWh
UmGhBbj, DĀmcm EC dhGhW Fci gFdSh SiAc Fch-
BEz

fhghUS fÛLF ZhWhWic WiEb

¹⁰ “Shch ZhZdh dhFei UiA DHj fÛLF ZhWhBZhz
BOh dhæhđ AehB AS, Ume AS Xhf Ac Ume AS CKhz
¹¹ Dc Zhcm-aiScm GhOi fjWhUi dmXiA UiE, Ac
KhBcE FiWhchE fjWhc Wffh dhHhBEz ¹² gjWhcc
AHjBWUi XjeiA KhBcOh fjWhc Feh Dc KhBcE
FjWhS dhHhBE, E HhdhS ULBOh Ac g HhdhS UL-
BOh dhHhBEz ¹³ ZhZdh dhFeiUi ULHj ZmÛh Zh-
WhBA fjWhUi dmXiA UiSm EBZz ¹⁴ fÛLFcm ZBA
WmEAc dhHi ULBE Hhdhc Fehc bhMmUi, EC ULBE
ZmÛh ghchWi dhHZz ¹⁵ ZmÛh ULBEOh fÛLFc Fehc
aiScm ghchBđ cBZ, BHjBW GjdiE Whz ¹⁶ Abi Abhc
gjFjb-AgFhb dmGh Mm XZiİ fhghUS XhÍc Sjbhcm
Uibj, Sjbi BOh EC fÛLFc aiScm TBEz

¹⁷ “GhOi fjWhUi fÛLFc DGhW LhWi ZhWhBE,
EGhWc CXcm HjWhc FYch AUhđ Fch EBZz B LhWi
dhæhđ AehB AS Ac Xhfm Ume AS EBZz ¹⁸⁻¹⁹ Sjbi

gC LhWic FiWhchE fjWh XiOhBA UlHj FhcjZi ZhWhBEz EC FhcjZi UmGSm UldUld Ijehc dhGhW QhGWh Adhz ZhWhBA fùlFc UlB HhdhS dhHhBE, E HhdhS DFOh, Ac g HhdhS DFOhz UlBE FhcjZi LhWic dHm EC dhGhW Fci fjWhUi ZhWhWi dhHZ, MmSh AîhOh Ghdi DF KiM EDz ²⁰ Dc QhGWh UlBEGhW CXcmUi bmdhBd cBZ, Ac Dc LhDAc Sdm ThFZ fùlFc LhWiz UlBE FhcjZi bjGh-bjGi CZh ThFZ, Ac Shchc KCG cBZ LhWic ZhDz ²¹ B LhWicm fùlFc CXcm dhHhBE, Ac Abhc gjFjb-AgFhb dmGh Mm fhghUS XhÍc Sjbhcm Uibj, EC XhÍc Sjbi fùlFc aiScm TBEz ²² B fhghUS fùlFc LhWic CXcm UlBE FhcjZic bhMGhWE, Abi Sjbhcm UiUhc Uibjz EC UiUhec fbD ZWi BLchBdc dhHi Abhc gFd ABW-FhWjW MhWhBbjz

XZiï cJoi TBZhc OmZjd ZhWhBE

²³ “ZhZdh dhFei UiA UlB AS dhæh, DF AS Xhf Ac Ume AS CKh Fci DGhW OmZjd ZhWhBEz ²⁴ EGhWcm GhOi fjWhUi dmXiA KhBcE FiWhchE Wffh dhHhBEz ²⁵ OmZjdc KhBcE FiWhchE KhBc AJHjd CKh Fci DF ghM UiZhD, ghMc bhMm fjWhUi Wffh FcZhDz ²⁶ OmZjdc KhBcE FjWhS KhBcE XhDAc CXcm fjWhc KhBcOh Feh dhHhBZhDz ²⁷ B KhBcE FehBW OmZjdc FjWhc gC CKh ghMc Sdm dhHhBE, MhSm OmZjd ZBA WmEAc Zhdh Fehc aiScm ZmÛh ghchBd MhDz ²⁸ ZmÛh UlBEOh ZhZdh dhFeiUi ZhWhBA fjWhUi dmXiZhD, EC ZmÛhUi OmZjd ZBA WiZhDz ²⁹ OmZjdc CXcc Thd-ZhfW, Aèhc Whbm RhdiA UiZhc FjcZhWic MH Ac bH, gFdSh GhOi fjWhUi ZhWhWi dhHZz ³⁰ EC

OmZjdc CXcm Abhc LhbWm ghbmfh XZiï cjoI
TBZhD, B cjoI MhWj fZ fbD TEA EDz”

XZiï KmchHUhWi ZhWhWic WiEb

³¹ bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Sjbi GhOi fjWhUi
DGhW KmchHUhWi ZhWhBZhD, KmchHUhWic
Sdh Ac CXcc Qh×i GhOi fjWh XiOhBA HehBZhDz
Dc Qh×i, Ykdc dhGhW XiAdh, Fjei Ac XhXeï
EFd KmchHUhWic dHm DGhWE dhHhBd cBZz
³² KmchHUhWic Qh×ic ULB HhdhS SiWOh Fci
bjO LDOh Qhd ThFZz ³³ XcSmF Qhdc bhMm
MZhYkdc dhGhW SiWHj Fci XiAdh ThFZz Km-
chHUhWic LDE QhdE DFdhGhW Fhb Fch EBZz
³⁴ KmchHUhWic bjd Qh×ic bhMmE MZhYkdc
dhGhW KhBcOh XiAdh ThFZz ³⁵ EC bjd Qh×i ThFi
ZhcBd LDOh Qhdc bhMm, XDdh ULBE Qhdc MjehS
DHj Fjei, ULch ULBE Qhdc MjehS AcF Fjei, Ac gmfc
ULBE Qhdc MjehSE Fjei UiEz ³⁶ Fjei Ac Qhd gFdSh
KmchHUhWi ThFi ZhcBZ, gFdSh bidiA DF KiM
EBZz Aîhohc GhOi fjWh XiOhBA ZhWhWi dhHZz
³⁷ DcZhUm fhSOh dmb ZhWhBA EC KmchHUhWic
CXcm EC dhGhW Fci dhHhWi dhHZ, MhSm dmb
MhdhWic ZhUm KmchHUhWic LhbWh Yc EDz
³⁸ dmhc YiSh LhY Fchc KibOh Ac MhdhBd YiShc
Lhdi TEAc dhHi FDHj ZhOi, GhOi fjWhUi ZhWhWi
dhHZz ³⁹ KmchHUhWic gFdSh ZhWhWic dhHi DF
bW GhOi fjWh dhHZz

⁴⁰ “gjWE, EC Xhec CXcm Sjbhcm Mmdh Wffh
UmGhBd EBD, DÀmcm EC dhGhW Fci gFdSh Zh-
WhBEz”

26

Aèhc Ic ZhWhWic SmcXhd

¹ bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Sjbi Uf OjFch XmKhBd fjShc Uhbi didmW FhXeUi Abhc Icc aiScC XcUh ZhWhBEz Ac did, ZhBJHWi, dhhd fjShUi ahdh CîhUcmUi Dc bhMm FhcjZi EFdc LZi ZhBW FchBEz ² gFd OjFchBW DF bhXc EBZ, dhæhD AOhbF AS Ac Xhfm KhBc ASz ³ B OjFchBØc XhKGhW-XhKGhW Fci DGhWE Mjeh UiA, ULGhW Ze SmcXhd ZhWhBSm EBZz ⁴ Ze SmcXhdc XDdh OjFchc Xhfc DF FiWhchE did fjShUi gjFc Ykc ZhWhBSm EBZz ULLch OjFchSE ECdh FcSm EBZz ⁵ XDdh SmcXhdc FiWhchE XBÓhfHj gjFc Ykc Ac ULLch SmcXhdE ECdh XBÓhfHj Ykc UiSm EBZz UlBE Ze SmcXhdc gjFc Ykc DHj AcmHjc CdOhbjGh ThFZz ⁶ ZhUm fjWhUi XBÓhfHj gjF ZhWhBA gC Ykcc bhMmUi ghchBA, Ze UlBE SmcXhdcem AOFhB UiEz SmC B UlBE OjFchUi DGhW Ic SiAc EBZz

⁷ “Abhc Icc CXc Hjchc dhHi LhHdc cjbh UiA SmcXhdc dhGhW DHhcEGhW OjFch ZhWhWi dhHZz ⁸ gFd OjFchBW DF bhXc EBZ, Sif AS dhæh Ac KhBc AS Xhfz ⁹ EW ThFi XhK OjFch DFdHm Mjeh UiA Ze DF SmcXhd ZhWhBSm EBZz Ac ZhFi LD OjFch Mjeh UiA, Ze AcF SmcXhd ZhWhBA ghcdm, EC ULLch SmcXhdc Mm OjFch ZheSi cBZ, EGhWcm Shæjc LhbWc ZhD UlB ahBÕ Fci UiSm EBZz ¹⁰ XDdh Ze SmcXhdc Xhfc DF FiWhchE XBÓhfHj gjFc Ykc ZhWhBSm EBZ, Ac ULLch SmcXhdEE ECdh EBZz ¹¹ ZhUm XiSd UiA XBÓhfHj gjF ZhWhBA gC gjFc Ykcc bhMm ghchBA, EC Ze UlBE SmcXhd DGhWE Mjeh UiSm EBZz SmC B UlBE SmcXhd bidiA DGhW LhWi EBZz ¹² LhHdc cjbhc Ze SmcXhdc Mm AVh OjFch ZheSi EBZ, BGhW GcmUi dOFhBd cBZz ¹³ B SmcXhdGhW Sdc FhXe ThFi DF

AS Ze EAD BGhW UlBE HhdhZhD dOFhBd cBA
ghch Iccm HjciZz ¹⁴ Dc CXc Hjchc dhHi dhd cJH
Fch bmehc KhbehUi AcEGhW SmcXhd ZhWhBA
Hjci UiSm EBZz ZhUm Dc CXcm Yk'c KhbehUi
LhWi SpAc Fci Hjci UiSm EBZz”

Aèhc Icc YtmBb ZhWhWic dhFei-SÃh

¹⁵ bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Abhc Icc dhHi ZhZdh
dhFeiUi FDGhW YtmBb ZhWhWi dhHZz ¹⁶ XcSmF
YtmBb ZhWhBZhD Uf AS dhæh Ac Ume AS Yhez
¹⁷ EC YtmBbE UlHj Fci XhDA ThFZz gFd YtmBb
DFdhGhW ZhWhBSm EBZz ¹⁸ UÀiw Hhdhc dhHi
ZifGhW YtmBb ZhWhWi dhHZz ¹⁹ B YtmBbc Xh-
DAc Sdm UmEAc dhHi KhèifHj cjXhc ajch Zh-
WhWi dhHZ, XcSmF YtmBbc UlB XhDAc dhHi
UlHj ajch dhHZz ²⁰ Abhc Icc Cíc Hhdhc dhHiAE
ZifGhW YtmBb dhHZ, ²¹ Ac XcSmF YtmBbc Xh-
DAc dhHi UlHj Fci KhèifHj cjXhc ajch ZhWhWi
dhHZz ²² XBKbc Hhdhc dhHi, bhWi Gc Hhdhc
dhHi LDGhW YtmBb, ²³ Ac Gcc UlBE FjWhc dhHi
AcE UlGhW YtmBb dhHZz ²⁴ B UlB YtmBbcm
UlB FjWhc UlBE YtmBbc dHm Sdm-CXcm DGhWE
Mjeh UiSm EBZz XcSmF FjWhc UlB YtmBb Vhcc
YtmBbc dHm Zhíi bhciA DFdHm Mjeh UiSm EBZz
UlBE FjWh DFdhGhW EBZz ²⁵ SmC GcmUi AOGhW
YtmBb EBZ, Ac XcSmF YtmBbc Sdm UmEAc dhHi
UlHj Fci fjdHj cjXhc ajch dhHZz

²⁶ “Sjbi YtmBbcm Mjeh UiZhc dhHi ZhZdh
dhFeiUi FDHj dhæh Zhíi ZhWhBEz ²⁷ Dc bhMm
XhKHj Zhíi Icc DF Hhdhc dhHi, Ac ZhFi XhKHj
AcF Hhdhc dhHi, Ac XhKHj dhHZ Gc Hhdh, bhWi
XKib Hhdhc YtmBbc dhHiz ²⁸ YtmBbc bhMGhWE
dhHhBd EC ZhíiUi gFd YtmBbc DF bhTh ThFi
AcF bhTh XcMØ AOFhBZhDz ²⁹ YtmBbGhWhpW

fjWhUi dmXSm EBZ, Ac ZhÍi ghchWic dhHi fjWhc Feh ZhWhBA YtmBbE dhHhBSm EBZz B ZhÍi EFdE fjWhUi dmXSm EBZz ³⁰ Abhc Icc Mm Wffh Sjb-hcm EC Sjc Xhec CXcm UmGhBdhd, Sjbi DÀmcm EC dhGhW Fci BOh SpAc FchBEz”

Aèhc Icc dhHi XcUh

³¹ bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Sjbi did, dhd, ZhBJHWi fjSh Ac XmKhBd Uhbi didmW FhXeUi DGhW XcUh ZhWhBEz ahdh FjWj CihUcmUi Dc CXcm FhcjZi EFdc LZi ZhBW FchBEz ³² B XcUhGhW ZhZdh dhFeiUi KhBcOh GjOic dHm dhHhBA fjWhc FehUi dOFhB UiZhD, GjOic bhThS fjWhc Feh dhHhBZhDz Ac GjOiHjBW fjWhUi dmXhBZhD, GjOic SdhS cjXhc ajch dhHhBZhDz ³³ XcUhc CXcc didmW FhXeE dhHhBd gjFc dHm XcUhGhW dOFhBd cBZz B XcUhc Gcm fhghUS fùlF TBZhDz XcUhUi Abhc Icc gmcm b fciY, bhWi GhL XhF MhHh Ac XhF MhHhc bhMGhWE Zmeh UiEz ³⁴ EC gmcm b fciYc aiScm fhghUS fùlFc CXcm Dc LhWi dhHhBEz ³⁵ B XcUhc Zhcm XhF MhHhc Cíc HhdhS XZií cjOi TBZhc OmZjdGhW TBE, Ac Dc CdOh bjGh UÀiw HhdhS TBE KmchHUhWiz

³⁶ “Abhc Icc UlAcc dhHi DGhW XcUh ZhWhBE, BGhW Uhbi didmW FhXeUi ZhWhBA ghci, did, ZhBJHWi, dhd cJHc fjShUi Wffh FciEz ³⁷ B XcUhc dhHi fjWhc Feh Ac ZhZdh dhFeic XhKOh GjOi ZhWhBEz GjOiHjBW fjWhUi dmXhBE, GjOic SdhS XiSdc XhKHj ajch dhHhBEz”

27

MhdhBd FjcZhWi GhWh ZhWhBE

¹ bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Sjbi ZhZdh dhFeiUi XhK AS dhæh, XhK AS Xhf Ac SiW AS CZi UiA KhBcFjWi Fci DGhW FjcZhWi GhWh SpAc FchBEz ² Dc KhBcE FjWhc CXcm dhFeiUi KhBcOh giq UiEz EC giq FjWhc dhFei GjuIA ZhWhWi dhHZ, B AîhGhw DF KiM EBZz ZhUm Xjch FjcZhWi GhWh XiSdUi dmXhBEz ³ FjcZhWi GhWhc Lhdi Sjdhc Ze KhbK Ac Hhbdh, dC TEAc ZhOi, Hjî Sjdhc Ki-bOh, Ajch TEAc XhSid, gFdSh XiSdUi ZhWhBEz ⁴ XiSdUi DGhW Mhdi ZhWhBZhDz Dc KhBc FjWhS KhBcOh XiSdc Feh dhHhBEz ⁵ FjcZhWi GhWhc Sdh ThFi CXcc bhMhbmMi MhHhc SheiAc Sdm EC Mhdi ZEABEz ⁶ FjcZhWi GhWh ZBA WiZhc dhHi ZhZdh dhFeiUi UIHj ZmÛh ZhWhBE, ZhWhBA ULBEHj XiSdUi dmXiEz ⁷ B ZmÛhBW Fehc aiScmUi ghchWi dhHZz SmC FjcZhWi GhWh ZBA WmEAc Zhdh UIBE ZmÛhBW FjcZhWi GhWhc ULB HhdhZhD ThFZz ⁸ FjcZhWi GhWh SÃhUi ZhWhBA Dc aiScm YhF chGiEz Abi EC Xhec CXcm Sjbhcm Mmdh Wffh UmGhBdhh, DÀmcm EdhGhW Fci ZhWhWi dEABEz

Aèhc Icc CPhWc WbjWh

⁹ “Abhc Icc KhBcEZhd CPhW ThFZz Dc UÀiw HhdhZhD DF-f AS chGiE, B bjGh UiZhD Uhbi didmW FhXec XcUhz ¹⁰ B XcUh OhWhWic dhHi ZifHj GjOi UiZhDz GjOic SdhS UiZhD DFOh Fci XiSdc ajch, XcUh OhWhWic dhHi cjXhc Feh Ac ZhÛizhc She dhHhBZhDz ¹¹ CÍc HhdhZhD DF-f AS CPhW chGZhDz gWEE XcUh UiE, ZifHj GjOi, ZifHj XiSdc ajch, GjOic dHm dhHhBE cjXhc Feh Ac Shez ¹² XBKbm XBÓhf AS CPhW chGiE, gWEE FDGhW XcUh, UfHj GjOi, XcSmF GjOic SdhS DFOh Fci ajch

UiEz ¹³ XjZmUiE XBÓhf AS CPhW chGiE; ¹⁴ HmBOc
 DF HhdhS XWc AS dhæh XcUh, SiWOh GjOi Ac
 SiWOh ajch dhHhBZhD, ¹⁵ Edh ULLch HhdhSE
 XWc AS XcUh, SiWOh GjOi Ac SiWOh ajch UiEz
¹⁶ CPhWc HmBOc dhHi KhBcOh GjOi, KhBcOh
 ajch Ac Zif AS dhæh DGhW XcUhz XcUhGhW
 Uhbi didmW FhXeUi ZhWhBA did, ZhBJHWi, dhd
 fjShUi Wffh FchBEz ¹⁷ CPhWc KhBcE Hhdhc gÀd
 GjOicm ZhÛizhc Shc Ac Feh EBZ cjXhc, Dc Sdm
 XiSdc ajch ThFZz ¹⁸ CPhWGhW dhæhd DF-f AS
 Ac Xhfm XBÓhf AS EBZz Dc KhBcEZhd XhK AS
 CZi XcUh UiE, XcUh EBZ Uhbi didmW FhXec, Ac
 GjOiØc Sdm UiE XiSdc ajchz ¹⁹ Abhc Icc Fhbc
 gFd KiM XiSdUi ZhWhBZhD, bjd Shæj Ac CPhWc
 Zmehc OhWhc cfc Sdc XmcmH EFd XiSdc EBZz
²⁰ “Sjbi ZWi BLchBd EFdcM gjFjb UiE, Shch
 MDSjW LmLiA Smd ZhWhBA Sjbhc HmLm AWS,
 MhSm dmb ghbmFh MhdhBd cDz ²¹ bidW-Shæjc
 fhghUS fÛlFc LhbWm Mm XcUhGhW ThFZ, EC
 XcUhc ZhcM ghcjW Ac Shc XjApØm ghBÕh ThFi
 YMc XcMØ, bhZjUc LhbWm dmbHjBW UmGh-
 gjWh FcZhz Abhc EC gjFjb MhWj ZWi BLchBdm
 EAcifc Xc EAcif Vci gc-ghbmFh Abd Fcmz”

28

Bbhb EFdc dmZhL

¹ bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “E bjLh, ZWi BLchBdc
 bhMm BbhbSi Fchc dhHi Sjbhc ahB ghcjW, Shc
 XjA WhUhZ, AZigj, Adi-AMc Ac BLhbhccm Sjbhc
 LhbWm AWhEz

² “Sjbhc ahB ghcjWc BÌs Ac fjÛc ZehWic dhHi
 XZiÿ dmZhL SpAc FchEz ³ Abi XhF cggj UiA MmSh

CìhU EFdcm FhciHci Fhbc AGd-gmFbS UiLi, Sjbi gC FhciHc EFdcm gjFjb UmE, Shch ghcjWc dhHi ECdh XZiĩ dmZhL ZhWhCÀh, Mm dmZhL Ghdi Abhc BbhbSic FhbE dhHmz ⁴ B dmZhLc bhMm ZjFc CXcc Tdi, DYcW, AdGmèh, KmHc FhXec XhBÕhzi, XhCHEi Ac FbcE ZhÙhc FhXe ZhWhBEz Sjbhc ahB ghcjW Ac Shc XjApØm MhSm Abhc BbhbSi Fhb FcSh XhcpW, DcdhHi Shchc XhF-XZiĩ dmZhL ZhWhBEz ⁵ dmZhL ZhWhBSm Shch did, ZhBJHWi, dhhd fjSh, Ac Uhbi didmW FhXe, DcdHm fjWhE dhHhBZhz

XcVhW Bbhc DYcW ZhWhWic WiEb

⁶ “XcVhW Bbhc DYcW ZhWhBZhd did, ZhBJHWi, dhhd fjSh, Uhbi didmW FhXe, Ac fjWhUiz BSh ahdh FjWj CìhUcmUi ZhWhBEz ⁷ DYcWc FhÙc ULB Hhdh Mjeh UiZhc dhHi ULGhW XOôoi ZhWhBA, DYcWc CXcc FjWhS dhHhBEz ⁸ DYcWc dHm Mjeh dhHhBd XmOc CXcc ZmdOGhWE DYcWc dhGhW did, ZhBJHWi, dhhd fjSh, Uhbi didmW FhXe, Ac fjWhUi ZhWhBEz

⁹ “Sjbi ULBOh AFiF Xhíc AWiA Dc CXcm BLchBd, bhWi BAFjZc XjApØc Whb GjUhBA dmGhBEz ¹⁰ XDdh Xhícc CXcm, Shchc MWbc gifhZm Ze ThFi gjcj bjGh LD MWc Whb, Ac ULLch Xhícc CXcmE ZhFi LD MWc Whb GjUhBA dmGhBEz ¹¹ gjWhc EFdm Uhbi Xhícc CXcm GjUiA Mmdh fid ZhWhBW, DÀmcm EC dhGhW Fci UIHj Xhícc CXcm BLchBdc XjApØc Whb GjUhBEz ¹² Xhíc ULBEHj fjWhc MhMBcc bhMm dhHhBA DYcWc FhÙc XOôoic dHm dhHhBEz BLchBdc XjApØc ZhD bhZjUc WMc chGhc dhHi, B Xhíc ghcjWm bhZjUc

LhbWm Shc FhÛc bhMm dhHhBZz ¹³⁻¹⁴ UlBE
 MhMBcc dHm fjWhUi ZhWhBd UlFLh KmBW
 dhHhBEz EC UlBE KmBW GhOi fjWhUi cfic Wb-
 jWhD XmKhBA ZhWhBEz

ZjFc CXcc Tdi ZhWhWic WiEb

¹⁵ “Abhc chD-YDLhdh MhWhc dhHi ZjFjc CXcc
 Tdi ZhWhBEz ahdh CîhU FjWj UcmicmUi ZhWh-
 BEz DYcWc Fhbc dhGhW BShE did, ZhBJHWi,
 dhd fjSh, Uhbi didmW FhXe, Ac fjWhUi ZhWhBEz
¹⁶ BOh EBZ dhæhD AVh AS, Xhfm AVh AS, KhBc
 FjWhAdh UlB ahBÕ Fch DGhW FhXez ¹⁷ Dc CXcm
 ghBc VchBA KhBc ghBc Xhíc dhHhBZhDz XDDh
 ghciS BAFjS, XiS, Ac XhÛh bWiz ¹⁸ ULLch ghciS
 dhd bWi, did bWi Ac gich; ¹⁹ SiW Wæc ghciS
 YicjM, HjbmU Ac XÐchH bWiz ²⁰ KhBc Wæc ghBcE
 XjGchM, ZpUlcôm Ac fjcjM bWiz B Xhíc Efd fjWhc
 MhMBcUi dhHhBEz ²¹ BLchBdc ZhcE XjAc dhHi
 ZhcEOh Xhíc dhHZz BSh DFE XhícE DF DF XjAc
 Whb GjUiA dmGhBE, Mmdh GjUiA fid ZhWhBd
 EDz

²² “ZjFc CXcc Tdic dhHi GhOi fjWhUi cfic dhGhW
 XmKhBA UlFLh KmBW ZhWhBEz ²³ fjWhc UlBOh
 Feh ZhWhBA ZjFc EC Tdic CXcc FjWhS dhHhBEz
²⁴ Ac KmBW UlBEHmLh UlBE Fehc dHm AOFhBEz
²⁵ UlBE FhÛc DYcWc LhbWc YiShS fjWhc MhMBcc
 dHm KmBWc DF bhTh ZhÛiEz ²⁶ AcE UlBOh fjWhc
 Feh ZhWhBA ZjFc CXcc Tdic UlB FjWhS dhHh-
 BEz B UlBEOh DYcWc dHm ZjFc Tdic Sdm cBZz
²⁷ ZhUm AcE UlBOh fjWhc Feh ZhWhBA, DYcWc
 FhÛc XOôoic fB SdmUi, XmOc CXcc ZmdOc CXcc
 fidhBc FhLhS dhHhBEz ²⁸ ZhUm ZjFc CXcc Tdic
 Sdc Fehc dHm XmOc CXcc Wffh Fch ZmdOc Feh

did fjShUi ZhÜiEz SmC EC Tdi DYcWc CXcm ThFi
gcS WhDz

²⁹ “XhF MhHhS ghbhBZhc Zhdh ghcjWm Abhc
chD-YDLhdh gjWhc dhHi, ZjFc CXcc Tdic CXcm
dmGh BLchBdc ZhcE XjAc Whb dhHhBSm EBZ,
B TdiOhD Shchcm gc-ghbmfh bhZjUc LhbWm
chGZz ³⁰ Abhc chD-YDLhdhc EC Tdic aiScm Ccib Ac
Sjçib chGiEz ghcjW MmZdh bhZjUc LhbWm AMic
EBZ, EC fbD BSh Shc ZjFc CXcm cBZz ghcjWm ZWi
BLchBdc dhHi Abhc chD-YDLhdh MhWhc CXhD
gifhZm gc-ghbmfh Shc ZjFc CXcm bhZjUc UmEA
EC KiM chGZz”

Bbhb LhZc AcE dmZhL

³¹ bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “DYcWc Sdm dhæh
Mm AdGmèh cBZ, BFOh XjchOhC did cJHc fjShUi
ZhWhBEz ³² bhTh ghchBZhc dhHi Dc bhMGhWE
YhF chGiEz B YhF MhHh MhSm Wh Lieo, DcdhHi
Dc KhBcE Hhdh Ue Fci ZhBW FcSm EBZz ³³ did,
ZhBJHWi, dhD cJHc fjShUi AWjAc Ydc dhGhW
ZhWhBA, EC AdGmèhc Sdc bjeic KhBcEZhd dhH-
hBEz Ac BShc bhMm bhMm UiE fjWhc IjJHjcz
³⁴ B bjeiS UiZhD DHj Fci AWjAc Ac DHj IjJHjcz
³⁵ BbhbSi Fchc Zhdh ghcjWm B dmZhL YiÜiZz gm
MmZdh XhF MhHhS bhZjUc LhbWm AMic EBZ, Ac
gW ThFi Zhcm ZhcBZ, EC fbD EC IjJHjç EFdc AEAM
gjWh MhBZ, SmC gm bcS WhDz

³⁶ “GhOi fjWhUi DGhW XhS ZhWhBA Dc CXcm
fidc dhGhW GjUiA EC ADAS dmGhBE, ‘bhZjUc
Whbm XhF-XZiïz’ ³⁷ B XhSGhW XhCHEic LhbWc
HhdhS dhHhBA did fjShUi ZhÜiEz ³⁸ BOh ghcjWc
FXhdc CXcm cBZz MS XhF-XZiï bhd ZWi BLchBdm
UhW-GDchS dBA ABZh, BShc gFd WbjWhc Ulf-
SicjOic ahc ghcjWm ZBZz bhZjUm MhSm Shchcm

FZjd FcpW, DcdhHi ghcjWm FXhdc CXcm B
 fjfWhc XhSGhW ghbmfm dhHhBA chGZz ³⁹ Bbhbc
 XhBÕhzi Ac XhCHEi SpAc FchBE KmHc Uhbi
 didmW FhXeUiz FbcE ZhÛhc FhXeGhW fjB-fjShUi
 Wffh Fci ZhWhBEz

⁴⁰ “ghcjWc XjApØc BÌs Ac fjÛcc dhHi XhBÕhzi,
 SFi Ac FbcE ZhÛhc FhXe SpAc FchBEz ⁴¹ Sjbi Sjbhc
 ahB ghcjW Ac Shc XjApØcm B FhXe YiÛhBEz Shchc
 bhThS XZiï Smd RhdiA GmdhYSi UiA Bbhbsi FhbE
 dhHhBEz Sjbi Shchcm XhF-XZiï FciE, MhSm Shch
 Abhc BbhB EBSH XhcpWz ⁴² Fbc ThFi CchS XcmØ
 fcb Hjchc dhHi didmW FhXeUi ghY-XmÖ ZhWh-
 BEz ⁴³ ghcjW Ac Shc XjApW MmZdh bidW-Shæjs
 ghbhBZh, Zh FjcZhWi GhWhc HmLm XhF Mh-
 HhS ghbhBA BbhBSic FhbE dhHZh, EC fbD Shch
 EC ghY-XmÖ YiWZhz SmC Shch Wi-EXchVi cBZh,
 bcSh WhDz ghcjW Ac Shc EAcifc LidLidhc dhHi B
 ABW gc-ghbmfm Khdj cBZz”

29

BbhB gijhZm ZEABd Fchc WiEb

¹ bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Sjbi BbhB EFdcM EC
 dhGhW XhF-LhY FciE, MhSm BbhB ZWiA Shch
 Abhc DZhUS Fhb KhdhBSH XhcpWz Sjbi WiGjS
 DHj ZiLhd Ac UIHj bmeh AWhBEz ² DcdHm
 WicmF bDUhUi cJoi, SmdUi ahMh XiPh, Ac Smd
 bhGhBd KhXhOi ZhWhBEz BSh FjØhsc Ghbic
 bifhBE Whz ³ ESh ZhWhBA DF OjFciS dBE, DcdHm
 gC ZiLhd Ac UlBE bmeh dBA Abhc LhbWm ABEz
⁴ ZhUm ghcjW Ac Shc XjApØcm Abhc Icc UlAcc
 FhLhS AWiA, XhWiUi WhEAB UiEz ⁵ Ac gC XZiï

dmZhL EFd AWiA ghcjWcm YiÛhBEz XhBÕhzi,
 AdGmèh, DYcW Ac ZjFc CXcc Tdi gFdSh YiÛhBEz
 DYcWc dHm CîhUi ASc ZhWhBd gC XmOc CXcc
 ZmdOGhWE ZhÛiA UiEz ⁶ Shc bhThS XhCHEi
 YiÛhBE Ac fjWhc XhSUi ZhWhBd XZiï ShMGhWE
 dhHhBEz ⁷ ZhUm GmdhYSic Smd Shc bhThS
 RhdiA Shcm GmdhYSi UiEz ⁸ Shc XjApØcmE AWiA
 XhBÕhzi YiÛhBEz ⁹ ghcjW Ac Shc XjApØcm Fbcc
 FhXe ZhÛiA UiEz XjApØc bhThS UiE SFiz EC
 dhGhW ghcjW Ac Shc XjApØcm Bbhbc XUE ZEABd
 FciE, MhSm KicFhdiW WiEb gifhZm Bbhbsic XU
 Ghdì Shchc Zjfs ThFmz

¹⁰ “ZhUm gC ZiLhdcM Sjbi bidW-Shæjc LhbWm
 AWiE, ghcjW Ac Shc XjApØm EHjc Fèh ASHBA
 UiZhz ¹¹ ASHWic ZhUm EC ZiLhdcM bidW-Shæjc
 ULacc FhLhS WiA bhZjUc LhbWm MZE FciEz
¹² MZE FciA ghcdm Tjeh dC Sjbhc AJHjdiS dhHhBA
 FjcZhWi GhWhc giqHc bhMm dhHhBE, Ac ZhFi dC
 FjcZhWi GhWhc Sdm Rhdi UiEz ¹³ ZiLhdc XmOc
 aiScc ASacc KcZi, FBdMhc CXcc KcZi, UlBE FiQWi
 Ac Dc KcZi, FjcZhWi GhWhc CXcm WiA MhdhB-
 diEz ¹⁴ Dc Hjî, Ghd, ASac HjYc fjÐh ZWi BLchBdc
 Fmâc Zhcm WiA MhdhBdiEz BSh Ebd HjWh bhYic
 FjcZhWiz

¹⁵ “ZhUm gC UlBE bmeh ThFi DHj bmeh AWiE,
 AWdm ghcjWm Ac Shc XjApØm EHjc Fèh ASHBA
 UiZhz ¹⁶ Ac EC bmehcm MZE FciA Dc dC WiA
 FjcZhWi GhWhc KhBcE HhdhS LiOhB UiEz
¹⁷ bmehcm FhOia OjFchBA Shc Poj Ac XmOc
 aiScc gFdSh VBA, Fèh Ac ZhFi OjFchBØc dHm
 TBEz ¹⁸ gmfm B AîhHj FjcZhWi GhWhc CXcm WiA
 MhdhBdiEz BSh Ebd bhZjUc Whbm MhdhBd

FjcZhWi, bhZjUc WiESm GjfZDAdh MhdhBd LUHhz

¹⁹“ZhUm ULLch bmehcmE AWiA ghcjWm Ac Shc XjApØm Fèh AShB UiZhz ²⁰ AShWic ZhUm EHjcm MZÈ FciA Dc Tjeh dC WiA ghcjW Ac Shc XjApØc QhBW FhWc dSiS, QhBW ASc Ac QhBW XhEc Zjei AJHjdc bhMm dhHhBEz Ac ZhFi dC WiA FjcZhWi GhWhc KhBcE HhdhZhD LiOhB UiEz ²¹ ZhUm GmdhYSic Smd Ac FjcZhWi GhWh ThFi Tjeh dC dBA, ghcjW Ac Shc XjApØc HScE Ac dmZhLc CXcm LiOhB UiEz SmC dmZhL fjÐh ghcjW Ac Shc XjApW XhF-LhY EBZhz ²² Sjbi EC bmehc KcZi, KcZiAdh doJHjc, XmOc aiScc gFdShc CXcc KcZi, FBdMhc CXcc KcZi, UlBE FiQWi, Dc KcZi, Ac QhBWc chW WiE, BOh EBd BbhbSi FhbE ZEABdc dhHi ZGfiA UiZhc bmehz ²³ ZhUm bhZjUc WMcE TEA Ghbic Lheh cjOic OjFci ThFi DGhW cjOi, SmdUi ahMh DGhW XiPh Ac Smd bhGhBd KhXhOi DGhW dBEz ²⁴ dBA BSh gFdSh ghcjW Ac Shc XjApØc ASE UiA, bhZjUc LhbWm chGhc WiESm CKh Fci VcZhDz BOh EBd CKh Fci fXh FjcZhWiz ²⁵ Ac ESh Shchc AS ThFi WiA, bhZjUc LhbWm FjcZhWi GhWhc CXcm, gC MhdhBd FjcZhWic CXcm MhdhBdiZhDz BOh EBd bhZjUc Whbm AHjBWUi MhdhBd FjcZhWiz EC GjfZDAdh FjcZhWiD bhZjU Gjfi EBWz”

²⁶ bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Sjbi ghcjWcm BbhbSic FhbE ZEABd Fchc dhHi, GmdhYSi ZGfiZhc bmehc LiWhc OjFch dBA, bhZjUc LhbWm CKh Fci VcZhDz BOh EBd Sjbhc ZhOz ²⁷ ghcjW Ac Shc XjApØcm BbhbSic FhbE ZEABdc dhHi CKh Fci fXh FjcZhWic bmehc LiWh Ac chW gFdSh Sjbi XhF-XZiï FciEz ²⁸ EC dhGhW ZWi BLchBdc UmEA EC FjcZhWic OjFchBW gc-ghbmfh ghcjW Ac

Shc XjApØm XhBZhz BSh EBZ bhZjUc Whbm ZWi
BLchBdc UmEA LhdhbSi FjcZhWic DFOh EJfz

²⁹ “ghcjWc ZmZghc Fch XZiï dmZhL Efd Shc
EAcif EFdm XhBZhz EC dmZhL YiÜiA Shch
GmdhYSi XhBZh Ac BbhbSic FhbE ZEABd EBZhz
³⁰ ghcjWc ZhUm Shc Mm XjA Bbhb EBA bidW-
Shæjc XhF MhHhS Fhb FcZ, gm fhSUiW XcMØ B
dmZhL Shc HSce chGZz

³¹ “GmdhYSi ZGfiZhc bmehc EC HjîGhWhpW
WiA FjWj XZiï MhHhS chÜizhdz ³² ghcjW Ac Shc
XjApØm bidW-Shæjc UlAcc FhLhS ZBA, OjFciS TEA
gC cjoic dHm EC Hjî GhBZhz ³³ Bbhc FhbE ZEABd
Fchc dhHi, Shchem XhF-LhY Fchc dhHi, GhWic
MmSh KiM Efd HjWhc bhYic dhHi FjcZhWi UmEA
EBZ, BSh Ghdi ghcjW Ac Shc XjApØm GhBZhz Ac
FmC BSh GhBS XhcS WhD, FhcW BSh EBd XhF-
XZiï GhWhz ³⁴ EC ZEABd Fchc FjcZhWic bmehc
FjWj Hjî Zh cjoI MjUi ZiAW XcMØ cBMhD, Sm
BSh MhdhBdiSm EBZ, FmC GhBS XhcS WhD, BSh
S XhF-XZiïz

³⁵ “ghcjW Ac Shc XjApØc dhHi, Abi Sjbhcm
MSSh Fchc gjFjb UiLi, Sjbi ECdh FciEz ZEABd
Fchc EC Fhb Sjbi fhSUiW ach FciEz ³⁶ HjWh
bhYic FYch gifhZm Sjbi XcSmF UiW DHj Fci ZiLhd
FjcZhWi UiZhdz Ac FjcZhWi GhWhcm XhF-XZiï
Fchc dhHiE EC dhGhW FjcZhWi UiE, Ac XhF-LhY
EAc dhHi XZiï Smd RhdiEz ³⁷ FjcZhWi GhWhcm
XhF-XZiï Fchc dhHi fhSUiW ach FjcZhWi UiA,
HjWh bhYic FYch AUhD FciA XhF-XZiï FciEz SmC B
FjcZhWi GhWh DF bgh-XZiï MhHh EBZz MmFjWj
MiWif B FjcZhWi GhWhS LjABdm, BSh XhF-XZiï
EBMiZz

XcSmF UiWc FjcZhWic WiEb

³⁸ “Dc ZhU ThFi XcSmF UiW B FjcZhWi GhWhc CXcm, DF ZcL ZDEfc ULHj bmehc ZhBóh FjcZhWi UiZhD, ³⁹ DHj ZiAWm Ac DHj ghBÕhzhdhz ⁴⁰ XDdh bmehc ZhBóhc dHm DF fmc WicmF bDUh Ac DF fmc MDSjWc Xifh Smd bifhBSm EBZz Ac RhdiA UiZhc FjcZhWic dhHi AJHjcc DF fmc fcZSE Aèhc Whbm UiZhDz ⁴¹ ghBÕhzhdh Mm bmeh FjcZhWi UiZhD, DcdHmE ZiAWFjc dhGhW Yfd FjcZhWi Ac RhdiA UiZhc FjcZhWic gFdSh UiSm EBZz BSh Ebd bhZjUc WiESm GjfZDAdh MhdhBd FjcZhWiz

⁴² “EAcifc Xc EAcif Vci bidW-Shæjc UAcc HmLm, bhWi Abhc LhbWm XcSmF UiW B MhdhBd FjcZhWi UiSm EBZz gWE Abi Sjbchcm UiUhc Uibj, Sjbhc dHm ZhSKiS Fcbjz ⁴³ ZWi BLchBdc HmLm Abi gWE UiUhc Uibj, Ac Abhc FjUcSm EC MhHh XhF-XZiï EBZz ⁴⁴ Abi bidW-Shæj Ac FjcZhWi GhWh XZiï Fcbjz Abhc BbhbSic dhHi ghcjW Ac Shc XjApØcmE Abi XZiï Fcbjz ⁴⁵ Abi ZWi BLchBdc bhZjU EBA Shchc bhMm ZfS Fcbjz ⁴⁶ SmC Shch MhWZh, Abi Aèhc Shchc bhZjUz Abi Shchc dHm ZfS Fchc dhHiC S Shchcm bife Umf ThFi Zhc FciA AWLiz Abi Aèhc Shchc bhZjUz”

30*AHc-GjfZD MhdhWi GhWh*

¹ bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “AHc-GjfZD MhdhBZhc dhHi Sjbi ZhZdh dhFeiUi DGhW MhdhWi GhWh ZhWhBEz ² BHj EBZ KhBcFjWhAdh, DF AS dhæh, DF AS Xhf, UIB AS CZiz AîhGhWC giq fjÐh DGhWE dhHhBd cBZz ³ Dc CXcc LhWi, LhWic KhBcE FiWhch Ac giq, gFdSh GhOi fjWhUi dmXiZhDz

KhBcE FiWhchE fjWhc Wffh FchBZhDz ⁴ Dc ULB
 FiWhchc Wffhc Sdm UHj Fci fjWhc Feh dhHh-
 BEz B Fehc aiScm ZmÛh ghchBA EHj ZBA WmEA
 EBZz ⁵ B ZmÛhHjBW ZhZdh dhFeiUi ZhWhBA
 fjWhUi dmXhBEz ⁶ fhghUS fÛFc LhWic FhLhS Mm
 XcUhGhW ALm, EC MhdhWi GhWh Dc LhbWm
 chGiEz EC MhHhS Abi Sjbhcm UiUhc Uibjz

⁷ “XcSmF UiW ZiAWm dmb HjBW MjBS-MhBS
 Fchc Zhdh, ghcjWm MhdhWi GhWhc CXcm GjFZ-
 DAdh AHc MhdhBZz ⁸ ghBÕhzhdh dmb MhdhWic
 fbD, gm gicZhc AHc-GjFZD MhdhBZz Sjbchc EAcifc
 Xc EAcif Vci bhZjUc LhbWm ge-ghbmfh EC AHc-
 GjFZD MdZz ⁹ B AHc-GjFZD MhdhWi GhWhc CXcm
 ULLch FjWj MhSc GjFZD MhdhBE Whz FjWj Mhd-
 hBd FjcZhWi, Yfd FjcZhWi, Zh RhdiZhc MjFh
 XhWi MhSiE FjØh FjcZhWi FciE Whz ¹⁰ HjWhc
 bhYic FYch gifhZm, ghcjWm ZLcE DFZhc HjWh
 bhYic FjcZhWic dC, MhdhWi GhWhc giqHc CXcm
 dhHhBSm EBZz SmC BGhW bhZjUc Whbm bgh-
 XZiï EBZz EAcifc Xc EAcif Vci XcVhW BbhbM ZLcE
 DFZhc EC dhGhW FcSm EBZz”

MhWc ZUdh cjXh

¹¹ ZhUm bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, ¹² “Sjbi MmZdh
 ZWi BLchBdc bhWfc XcibhW HWiZhD, EC fbD
 Shch gFdmC MhcMic MhWc ZUdh cjXh UiSm EBZ,
 MhSm B HWhc dhHi Shchc CXcm FjWj HMZ Wh
 ADz ¹³ Shchem HWhc Zhdh ECdh ZUdh dBE, HWh
 EBLm UdE Mmch ghbhBZh, Dch DZhUS-GhWhc
 bhXm AVh Sdh cjXh UiZhz B cjXh EBZ bhZjUcz
¹⁴ Zif ZcL Zh Dc Zmfi ZDEfc MmFjWj MW HWh fmf
 EA UdE ghbhBdm, DW MhWc ZUdh bhZjUcm EC
 cjXh UiZhz ¹⁵ MhWc ZUdh UmEAc fbD VWi EFdm

EC AVh Sjdhc Zmfi UiSh XhcSh WhD, Ac HciZmE
 Fb Uidm EBS WhDz ¹⁶ Sjbi ZWi BLchBdc HmL ThFi
 MhWc ZUdh EC cjXh WiA, Abhc Icc FhbE dhHhBEz
 Sjbhc MhWc ZUdh B cjXhD, ZWi BLchBd EFdc
 bhZjUc UcZhcE BAU FchB UiZz”

EMjc XhWic Hhbdh ZhWhBE

¹⁷ bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, ¹⁸ “EMj Fchc dhHi Sjbi
 XiSdc DFOh Hhbdh, Ac Hhbdh TEAc dhHi XiSdc
 DGhW KFi-GhO ZhWhBEz bidW-Shæj Ac FjcZhWi
 GhWhc bhMGhWE XhWi aciA EHj TBEz ¹⁹ B Xh-
 WiUi ghcjW Ac Shc XjApØm EMj FcZhz ²⁰ Shch
 MhSm Wh bcpW, DcdhHi XcSmFZhc bidW-ShæjS
 ghbhBZhc Zhdh EC XhWiUi EMj FcSm EBZz Bbhb
 gifhZm bhZjUc Whbm MhdhBd FjcZhWi AUhD
 Fchc fbDE EMj FcSm EBZz ²¹ Shch MhWm ZhKiA
 cEAc dhHi EC EMj FcZhz B gjFjb Shchc dhHi ge-
 ghbmfh Khdj cBZ, EAcifc Xc EAcif Vci ZEABd cBZz”

GmdhYSi ZGfiZhc Smd

²² bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, ²³ “Sjbhc WiMc HmLm
 GjZDUhc ahdh ahdh bfdh EFd Udh FcEz Sjbi XhKf
 Sdh bjch ASc, AehBf Sdh GjZDAdh QhBdKiWi, Ac
 AehBf Sdh ZL, ²⁴ fhVhcW QhBdKiWi XhKf Sdh,
 Ac MDSjWc Smd KhBc fmc Udh FciEz B bhX EBd
 DZhUS-GhWhc bhXmz ²⁵ EC bfdh EFd UiA AHc-
 GjZD bfdh ZhWhWic FhciHcc WiEbm Sjbi Gmd-
 hYSi ZGfiZhc Smd ZhWhBE, B Smd S XZiiz ²⁶ EC
 Smd UiA Sjbi bidW-Shæj, fhghUS fÜlf, ²⁷ OmZjd,
 OmZjdc CXcc gFd LhbhWh, KmchHUhWic gFdSh,
 Ac AHc-GjZD MhdhWi GhWh, ²⁸ FjcZhWi GhWh
 Ac Dc bhMc gFd LhbhWh, EMjc Hhbdh Ac Dc Sdc
 KFi-GhO gFdShcm YkLiA XhF-XZiiz FciEz ²⁹ SmC B

gFdSh bgh-XZiï LhbhWh EBZz BSh LhbhWh FmC
LBdm, gm-E bgh-XZiï EBMiZz

³⁰ “Sjbi ghcjWcm Ac Shc XjApWcm Abhc Bb-
hbSic Fhbc dhHi GmdhYSic Smd UiA XhF-XZiï
FciEz ³¹ Ac ZWi BLchBdcm MhWhB UiE, EAcfic Xc
EAcif Vci BShC EBZ Abhc GmdhYSi ZGfiZhc XZiï
Smdz ³² B Smd bhWfc HScE UmEA MhBS WhDz B
WiEbm Shch MhSm Ac FjWj Smd Wh ZhWhDz B
Smd S XZiïz Sjbch BOhcm XhF-XZiï bWE FciA Bìs
FcSm EBZz ³³ FmC MjUi B dhGhW Smd SpAc Fcm,
Zh Bbhb LhZ Lheh Ac FmC B Smd HScE bhGm, Sm
Shcm WiMc MhSi ThFi YkLidiZhDz

AHc-GjfZD ZhWhWic WiEb

³⁴ bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Sjbi WiMc HmLm FiLj
GjfZDAdh bfdh: HjHHjdj, WGi, FjWUlcj Ac GhOi
djZhW Udh FciEz Udh FciA ESh gbhW gbhW Fci
bifhBEz ³⁵ Ac Mmch AHc-GjfZD ZhWhBW, Shchc-
mUi EC Fhb FchBEz BShc dHm WjW bifhBE, BSh
EBZ WicamMhd GhOi XhF-XZiï AHcz ³⁶ EC AHcc
Tjeh Hjeh WiA bidW-Shæjc fhghUS fÜIfc LhbWm
TBEz gWE Abi Sjbhcm UiUhc Uibjz Sjbch B AHccm
bgh-XZiï LhbhWh bWE FciEz ³⁷ EC bfdh UiA B
WiEbm FmC MhSm Shc WiMc dhHi FjWj AHc-
GjfZD Wh ZhWhDz BSh S bhZjUc Whbm XhF-XZiï
KiM, BGhW GiAd chGiEz ³⁸ GjfZDUhc KiM bWE
FciA FmC MjUi BSh SpAc FcidhD, Sm Shcm B MhSi
ThFi YkLidiZhDz”

31

Aèhc XLÜ Fch FhciHc

¹ bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, ² “gjWE, Abi DgjUh
Hjìic gjcc WhSi, Ccic XjA ZhSLmddcm XLÜ FcLiz

³ Abi Shcm AèhB cggj UiA Fhbid FcLiz gFd dhGhW FhciHci Fhbc AGd-ZjÐi, ZiÐhd CîhUi Fhbc GmbSh Uiliz ⁴ DcdhHi gm fjWh, cjXh, XiSdc CXcm fjÛc fjÛc Wffh ZhWhBS XhcZz ⁵ Uhbi Uhbi XhÍc FhOiA bWi-bjÃh dhHhWi, dhFeic CXcm Wffhc Fhb Ac gFd MhSc ASc Fhb FcS XhcZz ⁶ Shc MjHhdi gifhZm Abi UhW Hjiic EgiLhbhFc XjA AgdiAZcm XLÛ FcLiz Mm CîhU EFdm B Fhb FcSh XhcZh, Abi Shchcm Fhbc AGd UiLi, MhSm Sjbhcm ZhShBd Abhc gjFjb bhYiF, BSh gFdSh Shch ZhWhBSH XhçpWz ⁷ Shch ZhWhBZh, bidW-Shæj, fhghUS fÛIF, Dc CXcc LhWi, Shæjc gFd bhd-LhbhWh, ⁸ OmZjd, OmZjdc dHc KiM Efd, GhOi fjWhc KmchHUhWi, KmchHUhWic dHc gFdSh Ac AHc-GjfZD MhdhWi GhWh, ⁹ FjçZhWi GhWh Ac Dc gFd bhd-LhbhWh, gh×i-zhfW, EMj Fchc Hhbdh Ac Dc KFi-GhO, ¹⁰ BbhbSi Fhbc dhHi ghçjWc BbhbSic dmZhL Ac Shc XjApØc dmZhL, ¹¹ GmdhYSic Smd, XhF MhHhc dhHi GjfZ-DAdh AHcz Abi Sjbhcm Mmdh gjFjb UiLi, DÀmcm EC dhGhW Shch ZhWhBZh”

MjçhZhcc WiEb

¹² bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, ¹³ “Sjbi WiMm ZWi BLchBdcm FE, Sjbch Abhc UmEA XcSmF MjçhZhcc bhWiEz B MjçhZhcc EAcifc Xc EAcif Vci Sjbch Ac Abhc bhMm DF WifhWh EBZ, MhSm Sjbch ZjMZhD, AbiC bhZjU, Ac Abi Sjbchcm Abhc XZiï ZÛh EAc dhHi AdhUh FcLiz

¹⁴ “Sjbch MjçhZhcc bhWiE, EC UiWcm Sjbchc dhHi XhF UiW Fch EBLmz FmC MjUi B UiW Wh bhWm, Sm Shcm bhçidiSm EBZz Mm bhWfm BUiW FjWjMhS Fhb FcZ, Shcm Shc MhSic bhM ThFi YkLidiZhDz ¹⁵ Sjbch ghßhc LD UiW Fhb FciE,

EBdm fhS Wæc UiW bhZjUc Whbm Achbc UiW,
 MjçhZhcZ fjÄzhc fjcjM QkZh ThFi fWiZhc fjcjM
 QkZhc AH XcMØ MjçhZhcZ B UiW Mm bhWfm Fhb
 FcZ, Shcm bhcdiZhDz ¹⁶ ZWi BLchBd EFdm Abhc
 UmEA KicFhdiW WiEb gifhZm, EAcifc Xc EAcif Vci
 gc-ghbmfh B MjçhZhc bhWSm EBZz ¹⁷ B MjçhZhc
 S ZWi BLchBd Ac Abhc bhMm ghbmfhFjc dhHi
 KicFhdiW DF WifhWhz FhcW LD UiWm bhZjUm
 ALbhW-MbiW gFdSh XDUh Fcdh, EBdm fhS Wæc
 UiW FjWj Fhb Wh FciA MichBdhz”

¹⁸ bhZjUm Sjc Xhec CXcm gMcS bjLhc dHm EC
 ZhSKiS fmf FciA ghcdm, bjLhc ASE UIB OjFch
 fhghUS Xhíc Uidhz EC Xhícc bhMm Aèh XhFm
 ShW WiMc ASm ShW gjFjb-AgFhb dmGLpWz

Aèhc ZicjÐm ZWi BLchBdc WhYcbhWi

32

(32:1-34:35)

fjWhc bjcSi XjMhc fhMh

¹ bjLh WZi Xhe ThFi dhbiA ABSm Umci Ec
 UmGiA, bhWfm ABA ghcjWc KhBcEZhd Udh
 EBA FBdh, “Abchcm XT KiWBA WmEAc dhHi,
 AXWm Abchcm UmZSh ZhWhB UmCÀhz FhcW,
 Mm bjLhD Abchcm bifc ThFi Zhc Fci AWLm, Shc
 FiSh IOLm Abch S MhWi Whz” ² BGhW gjWiA
 ghcjWm Shchcm FBdh, “Sjbch MhcMic ZC Ac
 XjA-XjeiØc FhWE ThFi fjWhc HDWh GjdiA Abhc
 HmLm AWEz” ³ SmC gFdm Shchc FhWc HDWh
 GjdiA ghcjWc HmLm AWiA Uidz ⁴ bhWfm MmSh
 fjWh AWiA Uidh, ghcjWm ESh WiA AHjBWUi Hd-
 hBA, gjWhcc ASiAcUi DF ZhLjcc bjcSi ZhWhBdhz

EHj UmGiA ZWi BLchBdm FBdh, “ahB EFd, EC DBWC Sjbchc UmZSh, MmBW Sjbchcm bife Umf ThFi Zhc Fci AWLpWz” ⁵ B ghdS UmGiA ghejWm gC ZhLjcc LhbWm DF Zdi GhWh ZhWhBA MhWhB Uidh, “LhbWc FhBd bhZjUc Whbm Gjfi-Zhfi Fch EBZz” ⁶ SmC ZhUc UiW GjZ LZcm CPiA bhWfm UmZShc LhbWm ABA bJHd Zdi Ac Xfj MhdhBA Zdi Uidhz ZhUm Shch GhEA-UhEA FciA ghci, gp-gjèh Fci WhK-HhW, YkcSi-AbjU FchS dhHdhz

⁷ EC bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Sjbi Xhec dhhS MhEz Sjbhc EC MmSh bhWfcm bife Umf ThFi Zhc Fci AWL, BSh S WhYcbhW ZWiHmLmz ⁸ Abi Shchcm Mmdh Kdhc gjFjb UiLdhh, Shch BSh ZhU UiA WiMc dhHi DF ZhLjcc bjcSi ZhWhBA, bhOiS XeiA EHjcm XcWhb Fcmcz EHjc Whbm Shch Xfj Zdi Umc Ac Fc, ahB EFd, EC DBWC Sjbchc UmZSh, MmBW Sjbchcm bife Umf ThFi Zhc Fci AWLpWz”

⁹ bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Abi BSh bhWfcm KiWi, BSh S HheSmeh-DFHjBA MhSz ¹⁰ EGW Sjbi Abhcm ZhVh UiE Wh, BShc CXcm Abhc HjLh AHjBWc dhGhW UhC-UhC Fci Mdmc, Abi BShcm LhcGhc Fcidibjz ZhUm Abi Sjbhc bhM ThFi DF bgh MhSi XDUh Fcbjz”

¹¹ SmC bjLhd ShW Aèh bhZjUcm biWS-Fhìi FciA FBdh, “E bhZjU, Sjbi Sjbhc FjUcSi AS UiA Sjbhc bgh FjUcSi Zdm MmShcm bife ThFi Zhc Fci AWL, Shchc CXcm Sjbi FmWm ES HjLh EBdhD? ¹² bifci EFdm FmWm BGhW bhShc fjMjH XhBSh, XheiA DdhFhS AWiA Shchcm GSb FciA, UlWiA ThFi Shchc Whb biOhBdiZhc dhHi Sjbi Shchcm bife ThFi Zhc FciA AWL? bhZjU H, Sjbhc B ZmThDA HjLhGhW Sjbi ThbhBdhEz bmgmcZhWi Fci, Sjbhc ZÙh EFdc

CXcm B HMZGhW AWiE Whz ¹³ Sjbhc AXW Hjdhb BZthgib, BLghF Ac BAFjZc FTh BAU FcEz Sjbi WiMc Whbm FLb GhBA Shchem FBLdhD, Shchc EAcif EFdcm Sjbi ALbhWc Smchc dhGhW ZhehBZhD, Ac Sjbhc EAUh Fch EC Aih Umfc bhdiFh-WhE Shchem UiZhD, Ac Shch gc-ghbmfhFjc dhHi Dc UGd XhBZhZ” ¹⁴ BGhW gjWiA bhZjUc bmgm-cZhWi EBdz ShBW ShW ZUh EFdc CXcm Mm HMZ RhdiSh KhBLdh, BSh ZhU UidhBdhz

¹⁵ DcZhUm bjLhD Aèhc UmEA ULBEGhW fhghUS Xhíc dBA dhhbS ABdhz B Xhícc CdQh-ahOiEd ULBE HhdhS dmGh ALidz ¹⁶ B ULBE Xhíc Ebd Aèh XhFc WiMc ASc Fhb, Ac B Xhícc CXcm GjUiA dmGhGhWE ShW WiMc ASc dmGhz ¹⁷ bjLhc GhUib BCLhD bhWfc BSh gp-gjèh gjWiA bjLhcm FBdh, “LhZ, Abchc Fmâc bhMm MjĐc AEAM gjWh Mhcz” ¹⁸ bjLhD FBdh, “BSh S FjWj MjĐc Ach-MiShc AEAM WhDz Abi MmSh gjWiAc, BSh S HhWc AEAMc dhGhW dhHmcz”

¹⁹ ZhUm bjLhD Fmâc FhLhS ABA bhWfc WhKh-WhKi Ac ZhLjcc bjeSi UmGdhz UmGiAC ShBW HjLhD AHjBW EBA, ASc Xhíc ULBEGhW BOh bhci YhdhB Uidhz SmC Xhíc ULBEGhW Xhec Sdm XeiA Kjbhc EBHmdz ²⁰ Ac bjLhD Shchc ZhWhBd ZhLjcc bjeSi WiA AHjWiS YhdhBA MhdhBdidhz ZhUm EHjcm XifiA Hjuh ZhWhBA XhWiS bifhBA, ZWi BLchBd EFdcm GhEAB Uidhz

²¹ ShBW ghcjWcm FBdh, “BSh bhWfm Sjbhc FjW GmSi FcLid, Sjbi FmWm ShchemUi ficiFi Fhb FchBdhD?” ²² ghcjWm MjAX Uidh, “bhdiF, AXWm HjLh FcpW Wh MhWj, AXWm S MhWpWC, BSh bhWjf Ghdi GhchX Fhbc AfiFz ²³ Shch ABA Abhcm FBdh, Abchem XT KiWBA dBA MhEAc dhHi

UmZSh ZhWhB UmCÀh, FhcW Mm bjLhD Abchcm
 bifc ThFi Zhc Fci AWLpW, DW FiSh EBLm, Abch S
 MhWiAc Whz ²⁴ BGhW gjWiA Abi Shchcm FBdhh,
 Sjbchc HmLm MmSh fjWh-UhWh ALm, ESh GjdiA
 Abhc HmLm AWEz Shch AWiA Abhc ASE Uidh, Ac
 Abi EGWhBW BOh bhci AHjWiS YhdhBdhh, SmC
 EC ZhLjc EHj ZhcBA ABdz”

²⁵ bjLhD UmGdh, B bhWjfHjBW ZmXcja
 EBHmLpWz ShBW ZjMdh, ghcjWm Shchcm
 ZmXcja EAc fjMjH UiLpWz DcdhHi UlfbW EFdm
 Afizhc fjMjH XhBLpWz ²⁶ EC bjLhD Fmâc HmBOc
 HmLm CZhBA FBdh, “Sjbch MS MW bhZjUc XÀm
 AL, gFd Abhc FhLhS AEz” SmC dmZi Hjìic gFd
 bhWjf ShW HmLm ABdz ²⁷ ABA ghcdm bjLhD
 Shchcm FBdh, “bhZjU, MmBW ZWi BLchBdc Aèh,
 ShBW WiMm gjFjb FcLpW, Sjbch gFdm MhcMic
 FbcE SdjAc ZhÛE, Ac Fmâc aiScm Mhcm LhbWm
 XhE FhSd FcEz Aîh Fmâc aiScm ahB-ZÛL, Aci-Yci
 Mhcm XhE bhceZ” ²⁸ SmC dmZi Hjìic bhWfm bjLhc
 gjFjb bhYif Fhb Fcdhz gi UiW EWjhbW SiW AMhc
 bhWjf bhch Hmdhz ²⁹ ZhUm bjLhD FBdh, “Sjbch
 ABM bhZjUc Whbm MhcMic XjA Ac ahB-ZichUcc
 CXcm AS SjdSm GcmUi HmL Wh, bhZjUc Fhbc
 dhHi Sjbch AdhUh EBL, DcdhHi bhZjUm Sjbchcm
 cgbS UiLpWz”

³⁰ ZhUc UiW bjLhD bhWfcm FBdh, “Sjbch S
 ZmMjBSh HjWh FcLz Sm Abi EGW gicZhc Sjc XheE
 bhZjUc UcZhcE MhBchb, Xhcdm Sjbchc HjWh
 bhYic FYchc FjWj XT Zhc Fcbjz” ³¹ bjLhD bhZjUc
 UcZhcE HiA AcM Fedh, “E bhZjU, B bhWjfHjBØm
 ZmMjBSh HjWh FcidiLmz Shch WiMc dhHi fjWhc
 bjcSi ZhWhBLmz ³² Sm Sjbi bmgmcZhWi FciA

Shhc HjWhcm EGW bhY Fci UidhE, Ac MjUi bhY Wh FcE, ShBdm Sjbhc dmGh GhSh ThFi Abhc Wh-bGhWE FhOidhEz” ³³ bhZjUm MjAX Uidh, “gjWE, Abhc ZicjDm Mmch HjWh FcLm, Abi Ghdi Shhc WhbcmC Abhc GhSh ThFi YkLidibjz ³⁴ Sm Sjbi EGW MhEHi, Ac Abi Mm Umfc FTh FBLi, Sjbi Shchcm dBA gC UmfE cEAWh UidhEz Abhc YiciñhD Sjbchcm XT UmGhBA WiZhz ZhUm MmZdh fhMh UmEAc fbD EBZ, EC fbD Abi Shhc HjWhc fhMh Uibjz”

³⁵ ghcjWc ASm ZhWhBd gC ZhLjcc bjcSic dhHi bhWfm MmSh FcLidh, EShc dhHi bhZjUm Shhc CXcm HMZ WhMid Fcdhz

33

Sjc Xhe ThFi MhEAc gjFjb

¹ bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “MhE, Sjbi EC Mmchcm bific ThFi AWL, Dchcm dBA EGWC B MhHh LheiA MhEHiz Abhc EAUh Fch gC UmfE MhEz Abi BZthgib, BLghF Ac BAFjZc HmLm EAUh FcLdhb, Shhc EAcif EFdcm EC Umf EFd Uibj, Sm Sjbi Shchcm dBA gWE MhEHiz ² Abi Sjbchc AHm Fci DFMW Yiciñh XhPhBbjz DBW HiA gWc FmWhWi, Abjci, giOOi, YhciMi, giäi Ac MiZjMi EFdcm GmUhB UiZhz ³ BSh S UIV Ac bCc ah×hcAdh Umfz EBdm Abi Sjbchc dHm EBA MhBSHb WhD, FhcW Sjbch GjZ HheSmeh-DFHjBA MhS, FiMhWj Abi XTc bhMmC Sjbchcm WiXhS FcidhBz”

⁴ B ZiXUc FTh gjWiA bhWfm FhÜh-FhOi dhHhBdhz Shch FmC FjWjMhS HDWh-HhOi YiWdh Whz ⁵ FhcW bhZjUm bjLhcm FBLdh, “Sjbi ZWi BLchBd EFdcm FE, Sjbch EBdhD HheSmeh MhSz Abi DF XdFc dhHiHmdmE Sjbchcm WiXhS Fcidibjz

Sjbhc HSce ThFi gFd HDWh-HhOi GjdidhE, SmC
 Abi ZjMbj, Sjbhc dhHi FiSh FcShbz” ⁶ SmC ZWi
 BLchBdm Sjc XheEC Shhc HDWh-HhOi gFdSh
 Gjdididh, BSh Ac YiWdh Whz

gMcS bjLhc (A:) GhWmFh-Shæj

⁷ gMcS bjLhc DF Shæj ALid, ShBW ZWi BLchBdc
 Fmâc Zhcm UlcB WiA EC Shæj XhSiSh, B Shæjcm
 ShBW GhWmFh-Shæj FBA QhFiShz bhZjUc HmL
 ThFi FmC FjØh MhWsm KhBdm Shch EC Gh-
 WmFhc HmLm MhBShz ⁸ bjLh MmZdh gi Gh-
 WmFh fciYE cEAWH UiSh, EC fbD gÀd bhWjf
 MhcMic Shæjc UlAcE CZhBSh Ac bjLh GhWmFhS
 Wh ghbhWi XcMØ gFdm ShW ZhD KhB cBSz
⁹ ShBW gi GhWmFh fciYE ghbhWic ZhUmC AèhB
 bmIc KhFh GhWmFhc UlAcc bjGE dhbiA ABS, Ac
 bhZjUm MSZBd bjLhc dHm ZhSKiS FcSh, ESZBd
 B KhFh EWE cBSz ¹⁰ bhWfm MmZdhC B bmIc
 KhFhcm GhWmFhc UlAcc HmLm UmGS, EC fbD
 Shch MhcMic UlAcc HmL ThFi bhZjUcm fBMUH
 FcSz ¹¹ FjWj bhWfm Shc Ulíc dHm bjGh-bjGi ZBA
 Mmdh ZhSKiS Fcm, bhZjUmE bjLhc dHm ECdh
 bjGh-bjGi ZhSKiS FcShz ZhUm bjLh FmâE YiciA
 ABSh, EBdm ShW GhUib WjWc XjA BCLh Whbc B
 MjAW, GhWmFh fciY ThFi ZhcBSh Whz

gMcS bjLhc HmLm bhZjUc EAUh

¹² bjLhD bhZjUc UcZhcE AcM Fedh, “bhZjU, Sjbi
 S FBchD Abi ESh bhWfcm dBA MhBShbHi, EBdm
 Abhc dHm Ac Fhcm UichD, BGhW S Abhcm Mh-
 WhBdhD Whz Sjbi Ghdi FBdhD, Sjbi Abhcm Sjbhc
 WiMc MW bWE FcE Ac Abhcm Sjbhc GhL bhDac
 WMcE chGLz ¹³ Sm ghLhC MjUi Abi Sjbhc bhDac
 WMcE ThFi, ShBdm Sjbi FjW GiAdm FiSh FcE,

ESh AbhcM MhWhE, MhSm Abi SjbhcM XjchXjc
 KiWi Ac Sjbhc cgbSc bhMm cBz Sjbi S MhWEC,
 B BLchBd MhSi SjbhcC XtMhz” ¹⁴ bhZjUm MjAX
 Uidh, “gjWE, Abi WiMmC Sjbhc dHm EBA MhBbj
 Ac SjbhcM Achb Uibjz” ¹⁵ EC ShBW FBdh, “Sjbi
 MjUi Abchc dHm Wh MhE, Sm Abchem BW ThFi
 ZiUhD UiE Whz” ¹⁶ Sjbi Wh Hmdm bhWfm Fidh
 ZjMZh, Abhc CXcm Ac Sjbhc B ZÙh EFdc CXcm
 Sjbhc cgbS ALm? AbchC MmW UIWiAc gFd MhSi
 ThFi AdhUh, BGhW Fidh ZjMZh?” ¹⁷ bhZjUm bjL-
 hcm FBdh, “PiF ALm, Sjbi Mmdh FBdhD, Abi Edh
 Fcbjz Sjbi S Abhc bhDAc WMcE AL, SjbhcM Abhc
 WiMc AXW bWE Fciz”

¹⁸ SmC bjLhD AcM Fcdh, “Sm Sjbhc fhW-SMèi
 AbhcM UmGhE Whz” ¹⁹ bhZjUm FBdh, “Abi MhcM
 Gjfi UDA Fcbj, Ac MhcM Gjfi cgb Fcbjz gjWE, Sjbhc
 LhbWmUi Abi Abhc gÀd WmF LjcS MhBc Fcbjz
 ‘bhZjU, MmBW ALpW’ Sjbhc LhbWm Abi Abhc EC
 Whb DdhW Fcbjz” ²⁰ EBdm Abhc bjG UmGhc ShÀs
 Sjbhc EBS WhDz FhcW AbhcM UmGièm FjWj AUb
 MhS ZhKm Whz” ²¹ Sm gjWE, Sjbi Abhc FhLhc EC
 MhHh ZhD KhE, UmGchD Wi, XhÍcc DF ThF ALm,
 EC ThFc CXcm Sjbi CZhEz” ²² SmC Sjbhc LhbWmUi
 Abhc fhW-SMèi MhEAc Zhdh, Abi SjbhcM EC XhÍcc
 YhOhc aiScm ghchBbjz Abi Wh MhEA XcMØ, Abhc
 AS UiA SjbhcM HjeciA chGbjz” ²³ ZhUm Abhc AS
 gchBdm, Sjbi Abhc Gc Hhdh UmGShD XhcZhD,
 EBdm FmC Abhc bjGc UiUhc XhBS WhDz”

34

WDA fhghUS XhÍc

¹ bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “AHc XhÍcc dhGhW Sjbi WDA UlGhW XhÍc SiAc FcEz Sjbi Mm UlGhW ahJHiLdhD, gi XhÍcc bhMm Mm gjFjb dmGh ALid, EC gjFjb EFd Abi gicZhc B UlBE XhÍce dmGiA Uibjz
² YMc ZhUmC Sjbi SiAc EBA Sjc Xhec CXcm CPiEz CPiA Xhec bhThS Abhc LhbWm AMic EBEz ³ Sjbhc dHm FjWj bhWfcm AWiE Wh, B Xhec FjWjGhWE MhSm FjWj bhWjf Wh ADz Xhec FhÛhs FjWj Hcj-LhHd Zh bmeh-bmeicm chGSm UiE Whz”

⁴ SmC bjLhD AHc XhÍcc dhGhW UlGhW XhÍc ZhWhBdh, Ac bhZjUc gjFjb bhYiF YMcm CPiA XhÍc UlBEGhW ASE dBA Sjc Xhec CXcm CPidhz ⁵ Ac bhZjUE bmIc KhFh ThFi dhbiA ABdhz ShBW gMcS bjLhc VhcE CZhBA ShW ‘bhZjU, MmBW ALpW’ Whb DdhW Fcdhz ⁶ ShBW bjLhc LhbWh UiA SfcíY Widh, Ac EC Fhdhb DdhW Fci Fci Hmdh,

“bhZjU, MmBW ALpW,
 cgbhW Ac cgib Aèh,
 ShBW MdUi HjLh FcpW Wh,
 ShW EZichb bhDA-bgäs Ac gF-ghdhdic FjWj fibh
 WhBz

⁷ ShBW AMhc AMhc EAcif XcMØ EZichb bhDA-
 bgäs FcpW,
 bhWfc EBÛhd-EXchV, WhYcbhWi Ac HjWhc bhYi
 UmBW,
 EBdm Ulfi MWcm fhMhE UmBWz
 ZhY-UhUhc WhYcbhWic fhMh,
 Shhc SiW-KhBc EAcif XcMØ ZcShBWz”

⁸ BGhW gjWiAC bjLh WZi dHm dHm fBMUhs
 XeiA FBdh, ⁹“E bhdiF, Abi MjUi Sjbhc UcZhcE cgBS
 XhB, Sm bmgmcZhWi Fci SjbíE Abhc dHGhWE

KdEz EC MhSi MjUiE GjZ HheSmeh-DFHjBA MhS,
Sh-E SjbI Abchc HjWh Ac FLjciem bhY FciA UidhEz
Abchem Sjbhc AXW XtMh gifhZm FZjd FcidhEz”

¹⁰ bhZjUm FBdh, “gjWE, Abi DF CLièh ZEABd
FciAc, Abi Sjbhc gFd bhWfc LhbWm EC dhGhW
FmchbSi Fhb UmGhBbj, MmSh Aîh UlWiAc FjWj
MhSic LhbWm FjWjUiWE Fch EBLm Whz SjbI
EC MmSh bhWfc dHm ZfS FechD, Shch UmGZh,
Abi bhZjUm Sjbhc dhHi FiSh FciAc, BSh UmGiA
Shchc MhWE Qc bhdjb EBZz ¹¹ Abi ABM Sjbchem
MmSh gjFjb Uibj, BSh GiAd Fci Abd FcEz Abi
Abjci, FmWhWi, giOOi, YhciMi, giâi Ac MiZjMi
EFdcm Sjbhc LhbWh ThFi GmUhB Uibjz ¹² EBdm
GZcUhc! Sjbch Mm UmfE MhBchD, B Umfc bhWfc
dHm FjWjMhS KjÃi FciE Wh, AcWhD YhÛE ghb-
hBZhDz ¹³ Sjbch Shchc XjMh-b×x ahJHiA OjFch-
OjFch FcZhD, Shchc Zdi GhWhpW ahJHidiZhD, Ac
Shchc Afmch-UmZic bjeSi Efd FhOiA YhdhBZhDz
¹⁴ Sjbch FjWj UmZShem XjMh FciE Whz FhcW
Aèhc WhbC bhZjU, ShBW WiMc Whb bhYiF DZhUS
XhEAc MBHôHz ShBW ShW WiMc XhEWh DZhUS
KhBWz

¹⁵ “gC Umfc bhWfc dHm FjWjMhS KjÃi FciE Wh,
AcWhD Shch MmZdh ficiFi Fhbc WiESm, Shchc
UmZ-UmZic LhbWm WiMcm fXiA UiZh, UmZShc
Whbm Zdi UiZh, EC fbD Shch SjbchemE UhES UiZh
Ac Sjbch HiA Shchc EC Zdic Hjî GhBZhDz ¹⁶ Sjbhc
XjApØc dHm Shchc XjeiØc ZiA-fhUi UiZhD, Ac EC
XjeiØm Shchc UmZShc HmLm HiA ficiFi Fhb FcZh,
Shchc dHm Sjbhc XjApØcmE OhWZhz

¹⁷ “Sjbch WiMc dhHi FjWj MhSc bjeSi ZhWhBE
Whz

18 “Sjbch Ghbic Lheh cjoic BU AUhD FciEz fhS
 UiW Ghbic Lheh cjoI GhBEz AZiZ KhÛc PiF Fch
 ShciGE Sjbchcm Mmdh gjFjb UmEA EBLm, EC
 dhGhW BU AUhD FciEz bWE chGiE, EC KhÛE Sjbch
 bifc ThFi ZhcBA ABLdhDz

19 “Sjbchc XmOc XDUh gFd XDdh XjA Abhc
 EBZz DcdHm Sjbchc Hcj-LhHd Zh Xfjc XDdh bmUh
 ZhBóhE Abhc EBZz ²⁰ Ghdi HhViØc XDdh bmUh
 ZhBóhc ZUDh, Abhcm DHj bmehc ZhBóh ZUDh UiA
 EHjcm GhdhL FciA WiEz GhdhL Wh FchBdm EHjc
 HcUWh ahJHidiEz Sjbchc gÀd Ze XjApWcm Edh
 GhdhL FchB WiEz

“gjWE, BUc fbD FmC Ghdi ASm Abhc FhLhS ABE
 Whz

²¹ “ghßhc LDUiW Sjbch Fhb FciE, EBdm fhS Wæc
 UiW MichBEz GmS Fch Ac Yfd UhEAc ZhdhE Mich-
 BEz

²² “VhW-Hb UhEAc Zhdh XDdh UhEA Yfd UiA,
 Sjbch Yfd UhEAc BU AUhD FciEz ZLcc gmf bhfE
 GmSc XhFWh Yd ZheiS AWhc ZhUm Shæjc BU
 AUhD FciEz ²³ ZLcE SiWZhc Sjbchc gFd ZmOhBW
 ABA gM Fchc WiESm Abhc HmLm AMic EBEz
 bWE chGiE, AbiC bhZjU, ZWi BLchBdc Aèhz ²⁴ Abi
 gC Umfc gFd MhSicm Sjbchc LhbW ThFi GmUhB
 Uibjz Sjbchc Umfc fibhWh ZhehBA Ze Fcbjz Sjbch
 ZLcE SiWZhc WiMc Aèh bhZjUc LhbWm AMic
 EBE, SmC Sjbchc MhHh-MbiWc ZhD FmC dhdK
 FcS WhDz

²⁵ “Abhc Whbc FjcZhWic Xfjc dHm Sjbch Gh-
 bicAdh FjØh dièh-FjcZhWi UiE Whz AMhUi BUc
 FjcZhWic FjWjMhS GhWi ZiAW XcMØ chGiE Whz

²⁶ “Sjbchc GmSc UhEA XDdh Yfdc gFd ThFi ahdh
 Ejf Aèh bhZjUc IcE dBA ABEz

“Ac gjWE, LhHdc ZhBóhc Hjî Shc bh’c UlVUi
chÛiE Whz”

²⁷ ZhUm bhZjUm bjLhcm FBdh, “Sjbi B Fhdhb
EFd dmGiA TEz Abi EC Fhdhb bhYiF Sjbhc dHm
Ac ZWi BLchBdc dHm Abhc bidWc CLièh ZEABd
Fcdhbz” ²⁸ EC fbD bjLh WZi Khèif UiW Khèif chBS
bhZjUc VhcE Xhec CXcm cBdhz ShBW FjWjMhS
UhWh-XhWi GhBdh Whz bhZjUm gC UlBE XhÍcc
CXcm ShW dHm bidWc CLièhc EC ADAS Efd, bhWi
fciESc UfOh gjFjb-AgFhb dmGiA Uidhz

gMcS bjLhc (A:) WjchWi LjcS

²⁹ SmC bjLhD fhghUS XhÍc UlBEGhW ASE dBA
Sjc Xhe ThFi dhbiA ABdhz bhZjUc dHm ZhSKiS
FchD bjLhc bjGc LjcS WjchWi EBHmd, EBdm
bjLhD BGhW Omc XhBdh Whz ³⁰ EC fbD ghcjW
Ac gFd ZWi BLchBdm bjLhc WjchWi LjcS UmGdh,
UmGiA Shch FhLhS ABSm QchB Hmdhz ³¹ EBdm
bjLhD Shchcm QhF Uidh, SmC ghcjW Ac ZWi
BLchBdc bjcäi Efd ShW HmLm ABdh, Ac bjLhD
Shchc dHm bhS-FTh bhSidhz ³² ZhUm gFd ZWi
BLchBd ShW FhLhS ABdhz ABA ghcdm ShBW
Sjc Xhec CXcm bhZjUc UmEA gFd gjFjb-AgFhb
Shchcm MhWhBdhz

³³ Shchc dHm bhS-FThe ZhUm bjLhD ShW
WjchWi bjG Hjchc dhHi XcUh dhHhB Uidhz
³⁴ EBdm bjLhD MmZdh bhZjUc dHm ZhSKiSc dhHi
GhWmFhc aiScm ShW LhbWm MhBSh, EC fbD B
XcUh Gjdidishz ZhUm Zhcm ABA XcUh dhHhBSh,
Ac Aèhc UmEA gjFjb Efd ZWi BLchBdcm Mh-
WhBShz ³⁵ gFd bhWfm UmGSh bjLhc bjG WjchWi
EBHmLmz bjLhD ShW bjG Hjcidish Ac bhZjUc
LhbWm MhEAc AH XcMØ ShW bjG Hjch cBSz

Aèhc XZiï Ic ZhWhWi

35

(35:1-40:38)

MjçhZhcc gjFjb-AgFhb

¹ bjLh WZiD ZWi BLchBdc gFd Hjìicm Udh FciA FBdh, “bhZjUm gjFjb UiLpW, ShW EC gjFjb-AgFhb Abd Fchc dhHiz ² Sjbch ghßhc LDUiW Fhb FciE, EBdm fhS Wæc UiW bhZjUc Whbm XhF-XZiï UiW, Achbc UiW, MjçhZhcz B UiW Mm bhWfm Fhb FcZ, Shem bhçidiZhDz ³ MjçhZhcm Sjbchc FmCcc Ice AHjBW MhdhBE Whz”

Aèhc Icc dhHi dièh UmE

⁴ gMcS bjLhD ZWi BLchBdcm FBdh, “bhZjUm gjFjb UiLpW, ⁵ Sjbch MhcMic Uide Gjfi bhYiF bhZjUc Whbm dièh dBA AEz AWhc fbD ECdh KiM EFd dièh AWiE:

fjWh, cjXh, XiSd;

⁶ did, ZhBJHWi, dhd cJHc fjSh;

Uhbi didmW FhXe Ac LhHdc cjbh;

⁷ dhd cJ dhHhBd bmehc Khbeh, Yk’c Khbeh;

ZhZdh dhFei;

⁸ dmb MhdhWic dhHi MDSjWc Smd;

GmdhYSi ZGfiZhc Smdc bfdh Ac AHc-GjfZD Zh-WhWic bfdh;

⁹ Bbhbc DYcW Ac ZjFc CXcc TdiS dhHhWic dhHi AFiF bWi Ac gFd WbjWhc Uhbi XhÍcz

¹⁰ “Sjbchc bhMm Mhch ahdh CîhU FhciHc, Shch ABA EC gFdSh ZhWhBZh, Mmdh bhZjUm gjFjb UiLpW:

11 Aèhc Ic, Icc Khd, gjF, YtmBb, Zhíi, GjOi, GjOic Sdc ajch;

12 fhghUS fÙlF, fÙlFc LhWi, fÙlF ZBA WmEAc ZmÙh;

fÙlFcm AHdh UiZhc XcUh;

13 ZmÙh fjÐh OmZjd, OmZjdc CXcc gFd KiM, bhZjUc Whbc XZiï cjOi;

14 Yc UiZhc dhHi KmchHUhWi, Dc dHc gFd KiM Ac dmb EFd, dmb MhdhWic Smd;

15 AHc-GjfZD MhdhWi GhWh, BGhW ZBA WmEAc ZmÙh;

GmdhYSic Smd, GjfZDAdh AHc, Aèhc Icc ULacc XcUh;

16 MhdhBd FjcZhWi UiZhc FjcZhWi GhWh;

Dc XiSdc Mhdi Ac ZBA WmEAc ZmÙh;

FjcZhWi GhWhc gÀd bhd-LhbhWh;

EMjc Hhbdh Ac Hhbdh TEAc KFi-GhO;

17 CPhWc XcUhBW, GjOiW Ac GjOic Sdc ajch;

CPhWE ghhbWic HmBOc XcUh;

18 Icc XmcmH Ac Uei, CPhWc XmcmH Ac Uei;

19 XhF MhHhS BbhbSi Fhbc dhHi, Bbhb ghcjWc XZiï dmZhL, Ac ShW XjApØcE BbhbSic dmZhLz”

20 bjLh WZic ZDAW ZhUm ZWi BLchBdc gFd Hjìi ZiUhD EBHmdhz ²¹ HiA Shchc Uidc DfFi

bhYiF MhcMic BÈhd Aèhc Ic ZhWhWic dhHi, Bbhb ghcjWc XhF-XZiï dmZhLc dhHi Ac DZhUS Fhbc

dhHi gFd WbjWhc bhd-LhbhWh dBA ABdhz Aèhc Whbm dièh UiZhc dhHi ESh dBA Shch AMic EBdhz

²² ZmOhBW Zh ZmOiØc bhMm Mhchc bWm KhBd, Shch BSh Uidhz Shch MhcMic FhXec Xiq, FhWc

BAciq, AJOi, Hdhc ghc, Ac gFd MhSc fjWhc HDWh
 AWiA bhZjUc Whbm CKh Fci fXh FjcZhWi Uidhz
²³ Ac Mmchc HmLm did fjSh, ZhBJHWi, dhd fjSh,
 Uhbi didmW FhXe, LhHdc cjbh, dhd cJ Fch bmehc
 Khbeh, Yk'c Khbeh ALid, Shch BSh gFdSh dBA
 ABdhz ²⁴ Mmchc HmLm cjXh Ac XiSd ALid, ShchE
 BSh AWiA bhZjUc Whbm dièh Uidhz Aèhc Icc FhbE
 dhHhWic MjFh ZhZdh dhFei Mmchc HmLm ALid,
 ShchE BSh dBA ABdhz ²⁵ MmSh ZmOiØm fjSh
 ZhWhWiS CìhU, Shch WiMc ASm did, ZhBJHWi,
 dhd cJHc fjSh, Ac Uhbi didmW FhXe ZhWhBA
 AWdhz ²⁶ Ac fjSh ZhWhEch MmSh ZmOiØc Uide
 bhMm DfFi XDUh Ebd, Shch LhHdc cjbh UiA fjSh
 ZhWhBdhz ²⁷ bjcäi EFdm DYcW Ac ZjFc CXcc TdiS
 dhHhWic dhHi, AFiF bWi Ac Uhbi Uhbi Xhíc dBA
 ABdhz ²⁸ dmb MhdhWic Smd, GmdhYSi ZGfiZhc
 Smd, AHc-GjfZD ZhWhWic bfdh Ac MDSjWc SmdE
 AWdhz ²⁹ bhZjUm bjLhc bhMUi MmSh MmSh Fchc
 gjFjb UiLdh, BSh Xjch Fchc dhHi ZWi BLchBdc gFd
 ZmOhBW-ZmOiØm, MhcMic Gjfi bhYiF dièh dBA
 AMic EBdz

ZhSLmdd Ac AgdiAZ Aèhc XLÙ Fch FhciHc

³⁰ ZhUm bjLhD gFd ZWi BLchBdcm FBdh,
 “bhZjUm DgjUh Hjìic gjcc WhSi, Ccic XjA
 ZhSLmddcm XLÙ FcLpWz ³¹ ShBW Dcm WiMc
 cjj bjZhcF UiA Fhbid ZhWhBA, gFd dhGhW
 FhciHci Fhbc AGd-ZjĐi, ZiĐhD CìhUi Fhbc GmbSh
 UiLpWz ³² DcdhHi DBW FhciHci Fhb Fchc Zhdh
 WiMc AGd GhOhBA fjWh, cjXh, XiSdc CXcm fjÙc
 fjÙc Wffh ZhWhBSh XhcZhz ³³ Uhbi Uhbi Xhíc
 FhOh, dhFeic CXcm Wffh, Ac gFd WbjWhc ASc

Fhb FcSh XhcZh³⁴ Ac EBÛ bhWfcmE BSh Fhb
 giFhWic dhHi ZhSLmdd Ac UhW Hjlic EgiLhbbFc
 XjA AgdiAZc Uide bhZjUm AGd UiLpWz³⁵ ShBW
 Dchcm WhWhW MhSc Wffhc Fhb, did, ZhBJHWi,
 dhd fjShUi FhXe ZhBW Fch, Wffh Fch, fidhB Fch,
 Ac Uhbi didmW FhXe fidhB FchcE AGd UiLpWz
 Shch gFd WbjWhc ASc Fhb FcSh XhcZh, Ac WiMc
 bW ThFi WhWhW WbjWhc Wffh ZhWhBSh
 XhcZh³⁶”

36

¹ bjLh WZiD DEGHw FBdh, “bhZjUm ZhSLmdd,
 AgdiAZ Ac EBÛ FhciHc EFdcm AGd-ZjÐi UhW
 Fcdh, MhSm Shch XZiï DZhUS-GhWhc gFd Fhb-
 FhM FcSh XhcpWz bhZjUm Mmdh gjFjb FcLpW,
 EC dhGhW Shch MhWj DZhUS-GhWhc gFdSh Zh-
 WhBW Ac ghMhBWz”

² EC Fhb FchWic dhHi bjLhD ZhSLmdd Ac Ag-
 diAZcm AWhBdhz bhZjUm MmSh CihU FhciHc
 EFdcm AGd-gmFbS UiLpW, Ac B Fhb Fchc dhHi
 Mmhc Uide GhBf XDUh EBLm, bjLhD ShchcmE
 AWhBdhz³ Shch ABA XZiï DZhUS-GhWh ZhWh-
 Wic dhHi, ZWi BLchBdc UmEA dièhc gFd bhd-
 LhbbWh bjLhc HmL ThFi fbMiA Widhz bhWfm
 Gjfi EBA WiMc BËhd XcSmF UiW ZiAWm AcE KiM
 EFd AWiA EWE dièh Uishz⁴ Mm CihU FhciHc
 EFd DZhUS-GhWhc FhbE ALdh, Shch BSh UmGiA,
 WiMc Fhb TBA ABA bjLhcm FBdh,⁵ “bhZjUm
 MmSh MmSh ZhWhWic gjFjb UiLpW, BSh Zh-
 WhWic dhHi bhWfm UcFhc ThFi AcE Zmfi bhd-
 LhbbWh dBA ABchz”

⁶ SmC bjLhc gjFjbm bhWfm gFd ZWi BLchBdcm
 MhWhB Uidh, DZhUS-GhWh ZhWhWic dhHi,

FmC MhWj Ac FjWj bhd-LhbhWh dièh Wh
UmBWz ECHi bhWfm dièh UmEA ZÙ Fcdhz ⁷ FhcW
DZhUS-GhWhc Fhbc dhHi UcFhc ThFi AcE Zmfi
KiM MjHhe EBHmLidz

Aèhc Ic ZhWhBd EBd

⁸ ZhUm Fhb Fcch CîhU EFdm XmKhBd fjShc
Uhbi didmW FhXe, did, ZhBJHWi, Ac dhhd fjShUi
ZhWhBd Uf OjFch FhXe UiA Aèhc Icc XcUh Zh-
WhBdhz Ac CîhU EFdm Dc CXcm FhcjZi EFdc LZi
ZhBW Fcdhz ⁹ XcSmF OjFchBW DF bhXc ALid,
dhæhd AOhbF AS Ac Xhfm KhBc ASz ¹⁰ ZhUm
XhKGhW-XhKGhW Fci DGhWE Mjeh UiA Ze Fci
UlGhW SmcXhd ZhWhBdhz ¹¹ Ac UlBE SmcXhdc
Xhfc DF FiWhchE, did fjShUi gjFc Ykc UmEA EBdz
¹² ECdh XDDh SmcXhdc FiWhchE XBÓhfHj gjFc
Ykc Ac ULLch SmcXhdc FiWhchE XBÓhfHj gjFc
Ykc dhHhBd EBdz B UlBE gjFc Ykc DHj Ac DHjc
CdOh bjGh Fch EBdz ¹³ ZhUm fjWhUi XBÓhfHj gjF
ZhWhBA gC gjFc Ykcc bhMmUi ghchBA, Ze UlBE
SmcXhdcM Mjeh UmEA EBdz SmC DGhW Ic SiAc
EBdz

¹⁴ Aèhc Icc Khdc dhHi LhHdc cjbh UiA Sm-
cXhdc dhGhW DHhcEGhW OjFch ZhWhBd EBdz
¹⁵ BSh XcSmFGhW DFB bhXc ALid, Sif AS dhæh
Ac KhBc AS XhFz ¹⁶ EW ThFi XhK OjFch DFdHm
Mjeh UiA Ze DF SmcXhd ZhWhBdhz Ac ZhFi LD
OjFch Mjeh UiA, AcEGhW Ze SmcXhd ZhWhBdhz
¹⁷ XDDh Ze SmcXhdc Xhfc DF FiWhchE XBÓhfHj
gjFc Ykc dhHhBdh, Ac ULLch SmcXhdEE ECdh
dhHhBdhz ¹⁸ ZhUm XiSd UiA XBÓhfHj gjF ZhWhBA
gC gjFc Ykcc bhMmUi ghchBA, EC Ze UlBE SmcXhd
DGhWE Mjeh Uidhz SmC B UlBE SmcXhd bidiA

DGhW LhWi EBdz ¹⁹ dh d cJ Fch bmehc KhbehUi
 Dc CXcc LhWi ZhWhBd EBD, ZhUm Yk'c KhbehUi
 AcEGhW LhWi SpAc FciA Dc CXcm Hjci UmEA
 EBdz

²⁰ ZhUm ZhZdh dhFeiUi FDGhW YtmBb Zh-
 WhBd EBdz ²¹ XcSmF YtmBb ALid dhæhD Uf AS
 Ac Yheo Ue ASz ²² XcSmF YtmBbE ULHj Fci XhDA
 dhHhBA Icc gFd YtmBb DFdhGhW ZhWhBdhz
²³ EC Icc UÀiW Hhdhc dhHi ZifGhW YtmBb MjBS
 Fcdhz ²⁴ B ZifE YtmBbc XhDAc Sdm KhèifHj cjXhc
 ajch dhHhBdhz XcSmF YtmBbc ULB XhDAc Sdm
 ULHj ajch dhHhBd EBdz ²⁵ Aèhc Icc Cíc Hhdhc
 dhHiE ZifGhW YtmBb MjBS Fcdhz ²⁶ B XcSmF
 YtmBbc XhDAc Sdm KhèifHj cjXhc ajch dhHhBdhz
 DFE YtmBbc Sdm ULHj Fci ajch dhHhBd EBdz
²⁷ Ac XKib Hhdhc dhHi, bhWi Gc Hhdhc dhHi
 LDGhW YtmBb ZhWhBdhz ²⁸ Ac Gcc ULBE FjWhS
 UlGhW YtmBb dhHhBdhz ²⁹ B ULBE FjWhc YtmB-
 bcm FhLhc YtmBbc dHm Sdm-CXcm Mjeh UmEA
 EBdz XcSmF FjWhc ULBE YtmBbcm Vhcc YtmBbc
 dHm Zhíi bhciA Mjeh UmEA EBdz ³⁰ SmC AOGhW
 YtmBb Ac fj dHj cjXhc ajch dhHd, DFE YtmBbc Sdm
 ULBOh Fci ajch Uidhz

³¹ ZhUm YtmBbc Mjeh UiZhc dhHi ZhZdh
 dhFeiUi FDHj dhæh Zhíi ZhWhBdhz ³² Icc DF
 Hhdhc dhHi XhKHj Zhíi, AcF Hhdhc dhHi AcE
 XhKHj, Ac XhKHj Zhíi Gc Hhdh, bhWi XKib
 Hhdhc dhHi ZhWhBdhz ³³ YtmBbc bhMGhWE
 dhHhBd EC ZhíiUi gFd YtmBbc DF bhTh ThFi AcF
 bhTh AOFhB Uidhz ³⁴ ZhUm B YtmBbGhWhpW
 fjWhUi dmXidhz Ac Zhíi dhHhWic dhHi fjWhc
 Feh dhHhBA, ZhíicmE fjWhUi dmXidhz

³⁵ EC CîhU FhciHc EFdm Uhbi didmW FhXeUi DGhW XcUh ZhWhBdhz XcUhc CXcm did, ZhB-JHWi, dhd fjSh UiA FhcjZi EFdc LZi ZhBW Fedhz
³⁶ B XcUh OhWhWic dhHi ZhZdh dhFeiUi KhBcOh GjOi ZhWhBdh, ZhWhBA EC GjOiØcmE fjWhUi dmXidh, GjOiØc bhThS fjWhc Feh dhHhBdhz GjOic Sdm ajch UiZhc dhHi cjXhc KhBcOh ajch ZhWhBd Ebdz

³⁷ Shæjc ULacc dhHi did, ZhBJHWi, dhd fjSh Ac Uhbi didmW FhXeUi Wffh Fci DGhW XcUh ZhWhBdhz ³⁸ B XcUhc dhHi XhKOh Feh Ac XhKOh GjOi ZhWhBd Ebdz GjOic bhTh Ac Sd fjWhUi dmXh Ebd, GjOic Sdc ajchc dhHi XiSdc XhKHj ajch ZhWhBdhz

37

fhghUS fÛLF ZhWhBdh

¹ ZhSLmddm ZhZdh dhFeiUi XZiï fhghUS fÛLF ZhWhBdhz BOh AehB AS dhæh, Ume AS Xhf Ac Ume AS CKhz ² Dc Zhcm-aiScm GhOi fjWhUi dmXidh, Dc KhBcE FiWhchE fjWhc Wffh dhHhBdhz ³ gjWhcc AHjBWUi XjeiA KhBcOh fjWhc Feh Dc KhBcE FjWhS dhHhBdh, E HhdhS ULBOh Ac g HhdhS ULBOh dhHhBdhz ⁴ ZhZdh dhFeiUi ULHj ZmÛh ZhWhBA fjWhUi dmXidhz ⁵ fÛLF ZBA WmEAc dhHi B ULBE ZmÛh, fÛLFc ULB Hhdhc Fehc aiScmUi ghchBdhz

⁶ ZhUm GhOi fjWhUi fÛLFc DGhW LhWi ZhWhBdh, EGhWc CXcm HjWhc FYch AUhD Fchc dhHiz B LhWi dhæhD AehB AS, Ac Xhfm Ume ASz ⁷ fjWh XiOhBA LhWic ULBE HhdhS ULBOh FhcjZi ZhWhBdhz ⁸ ULBE FhcjZi fÛLFc LhWic ULB FiWhchE cBdz B ULBE FhcjZi LhWic dHm

DGhWE Fci ZhWhBd Ebd, B Aìhoh Ghdi DF KiM
EBdz ⁹ FhcZi UmGSm UldUld Ijehc dhGhW QhG-
WhAdh, Dc UlBE QhGWh CXcmUi bmdia UmEAD,
EC QhGWhc LhDAc Sdm fUlFc LhWi ghbhB Hmdz
BOh bjGh-bjGi CZh cBdz Ac Shchc KCG cBd LhWic
ZhDz

XZiï cjoI TBZhc OmZjd

¹⁰ ZhSLmddm ZhUm ZhZdh dhFeiUi UlB AS
dhæh, DF AS Xhf Ac Ume AS CKh Fci DGhW OmZjd
ZhWhBdhz ¹¹ ZhWhBA ghcdm GhOi fjWhUi
dmXiA Dc KhBcE FiWhchE Wffh dhHhBdhz
¹² Ac Dc LhWic KhBcE FiWhchE KhBc AJHjd CKh
Fci DF ghM Uidh, ghMc bhMm fjWhUi Wffh
dhHhBdhz ¹³ OmZjdc KhBcE FjWhc XhDAc CXcm
fjWhc KhBcOh Feh dhHhBdhz ¹⁴ B KhBcE FehBW
OmZjdc FjWhc gC CKh ghMc Sdm dhHhWi Ebd,
MhSm OmZjd ZBA WmEAc Zhdh Fehc aiScm
ZmÛh ghchBd MhDz ¹⁵ OmZjdc ZBA WmEAc
dhHi ZhZdh dhFeiUi UlHj ZmÛh ZhWhBA fjWhUi
dmXidhz ¹⁶ OmZjdc CXcc Thd-ZhfW, Aèhc Whbm
RhdiA UiZhc FjczhWic MH Ac bH, gFdSh GhOi
fjWhUi HehBdhz

dmb TEAc KmchHUhWi

¹⁷ ZhUm GhOi fjWhUi DGhW KmchHUhWi SiAc
Fcdhz KmchHUhWic Sdh Ac CXcc Qh×i GhOi fjWh
XiOhBA HehBdhz Dc Qh×i, Ykdc dhGhW XiAdh,
Fjei Ac XhXeì EFd KmchHUhWic dHm DGhWE
Fci ZhWhBdhz ¹⁸ KmchHUhWic Qh×ic UlB HhdhS
SiWOh Fci bjO LDOh Qhd UmEA Ebdz ¹⁹ XcSmF
Qhdc bhMm MZh Ykdc dhGhW SiWHj Fci Xi-
Adh SiAc Fch Ebdz KmchHUhWic LDE QhdE DFd-
hGhW Fhb Fch Ebdz ²⁰ KmchHUhWic bjd Qh×ic

bhMmE MZh Ykdc dhGhW KhBcOh XiAdh UmEA
 EBdz ²¹ EC bjd Qh×i ThFi ZhcBd LDOh Qhdc bhMm,
 XDdh ULBE Qhdc MjehS DHj Fci Fjei, UILch ULBE
 Qhdc MjehS AcF Fjei, Ac gmfc ULBE Qhdc MjehSE
 Fjei dhHhBd EBdz ²² Fjei Ac Qhd gFdSh Kmch-
 HUhwI ThFi ZhcBd, gFdSh bidiA DF KiM EBdz
 Aîhohc GhOi fjWh XiOhBA ZhWhWi EBdz ²³ GhOi
 fjWhUi fhSOh dmb, dmbc YiSh LhY Fchc KibOh,
 MhdhBd YiShc Lhdi TEAc dhHi FDHj ZhOi Zh-
 WhBd EBdz ²⁴ DF bW GhOi fjWhUi B KmchHUhwI,
 Ac dHc gFdSh SiAc Fch EBdz

AHc-GjfZD MhdhWi GhWh

²⁵ ZhUm ZhZdh dhFeiUi KhBc FjWhAdh AHc-
 GjfZD MhdhWi GhWh ZhWhBd EBdz DF AS dhæh,
 DF AS Xhf, Ac ULB AS CZi UiA B MhdhWi GhWh
 ZhWhBdhz Dc LhWic FjWhc giq EFdE DGhWE Fci
 ZhWhBdhz ²⁶ LhWi, LhWic KhBcE FiWhch Ac giq,
 gFdSh GhOi fjWhUi dmXiA KhBcE FiWhchE fjWhc
 WFFh dhHhBdhz ²⁷ Dc ULB FiWhcc WFFhc Sdm
 ULBHj Fci fjWhc Feh dhHhBd EBd, MhSm Dc aiScm
 ZmÛh ghchBA ZBA WmEA MhDz ²⁸ ZhZdh dhFeiUi
 ZBA WmEAc ZmÛh ZhWhBdh, BOhcmE fjWhUi
 dmXidhz

²⁹ ZhUm GjfZDAdh bfdh ZhWhWic FhciHcc
 WiEbm GmdhYSi ZGfiZhc XZiï Smd Ac GjfZDAdh
 GhOi AHc SiAc Fcdhz

38

MhdhBd FjcZhWi GhWh Ac EMjc XhWic Hhbdh ZhWhBdh

¹ MhdhBd FjcZhWic dhHi ZhZdh dhFeiUi XhK
 AS dhæh, XhK AS Xhf Ac SiW AS CZi UiA KhBcFjWi

Fci DGhW FjcZhWi GhWh ZhWhBdhz ² Dc KhBcE FjWhc CXcm dhFeiUi KhBcOh giq Uidhz EC giq ZhWhBdh LhWic CXcc FjWhc dhFei GjUiA, DcdhHi B AñhGhw DF KiM EBdz ZhUm Xjch FjcZhWi GhWh XiSdUi dmXhBdhz ³ FjcZhWi GhWhc Lhdi Sjdhc dhHi Ze KhbKAc Lhdi TEAc Hhbdh, dC TEAc ZhOi, Hjî Sjdhc KibOh, AJch TEAc XhSid, gFdSh XiSdUi ZhWhBdhz ⁴ FjcZhWi GhWhc dhHi XiSdUi DGhW Mhdi ZhWhBdh, ZhWhBA B Mhdicm FjcZhWi GhWhc aiScc bhMGhWc KhBcE Hhdhc SheiAc Sdm dhHhBdhz ⁵ Ac ZmÛh ghchWic dhHi Mhdic KhBcE FjWhS KhBcOh Feh dhHhBdhz ⁶ ZBA WmEAc ZmÛh ZhWhBdh ZhZdh dhFeiUi, ZhWhBA UlBEHj XiSdUi dmXhBdhz ⁷ Ac FjcZhWi GhWhcm ZBZhc dhHi Dc FjWhc Fehc aiScm EC ZmÛh ghchBdhz FjcZhWi GhWh ZhWhBdh SÃhUi, Ac Dc aiScm YhF chGdhz

⁸ EMjc XhWi TEAc dhHi XiSdc DF Hhbdh ZhWhBdhz DZhUSi Fhbc dhHi MmSh ZmOiW Shæjc UlAcc FhLhS ABSh, Shchc XiSdc ADWhUi B Hhbdh Ac Dc KFi-GhO SpAc Fch EBdz

Aèhc Icc CPhW

⁹ ZhSLmddm Aèhc Icc KhBcE HhdhZhD CPhWc MhHh chGdhz CPhWc UÀiw Hhdhc DF-f AS MhHhc dhHi Uhbi didmW FhXeUi XcUh ZhWhBdhz ¹⁰ B XcUh OhWhWic dhHi ZifHj GjOi ZhWhBdhz GjOic SdhS UiZhc dhHi XiSdc ZifHj ajch ZhWhBdh, Ac XcUh OhWhWic dhHi cjXhc Feh Ac ZhÛizhc Shc ZhWhBdhz ¹¹ CPhWc CÍc Hhdhc DF-f AS MhHhc dhHi ZifHj GjOi, GjOic Sdm UiZhc dhHi XiSdc ZifHj ajch, Ac XcUh OhWhWic dhHi cjXhc Feh Ac ZhÛizhc Shc ZhWhBdhz ¹² XKib Hhdhc XBÓhf AS CPhWc dhHi XcUh, UfHj GjOi, UfHj

ajch, XcUh OhWhWic dhHi cjXhc Feh Ac ZhÛizhc
 Shc ZhWhBdhz ¹³ XjZ Hhdhc CPhWE XBÓhf AS
 ALidz ¹⁴ CPhWc HmBOc DF Hhdhc dhHi XWc
 AS dhæh XcUh, SiWOh GjOi, GjOic Sdc SiWHj
 ajch, ¹⁵ Ac UILch HhdhSE EC dhGhW Fci SiWOh
 GjOi, SiWOh ajch Ac XWc AS XcUh ZhWhBd EBdz
¹⁶ CPhWc KhBcE Hhdhc gÀd XcUhBW Uhbi didmW
 FhXeUi ZhWhBd EBdz ¹⁷ GjOic Sdc gÀd ajch XiSdc,
 XcUh OhWhWic Feh Ac ZhÛizhc Shc Ebd cjXhc,
 GjOic bhThE cjXhUi XmKhBd EBdz CPhWc KhBcE
 Hhdhc gÀd GjOiS cjXhc ShcUi ZhÛh EBdz ¹⁸ CPhWc
 HmBOc dhHi Uhbi didmW FhXeUi DGhW XcUh
 ZhWhBd EBdz ZhUm did, ZhBJHWi, dh d fJShUi
 Wffh Fch EBdz XcUhGhW Zif AS dhæh, Ac CPhWc
 ZhFi XcUhc dhGhW BShE XhK AS CKh UmEA
 EBdz ¹⁹ Dc KhBcE GjOi Ac ajch XiSdc, GjOic Feh
 Ac ZhÛhc Shc cjXhc, GjOic bhThE cjXhUi XmKhB
 UmEA EBdz ²⁰ Aèhc Ic Ac CPhWc KhBcE Hhdhc
 GjOic XmcmH Efd XiSdUi ZhWhBdz

Aèhc Icc bhd-LhbhWhc gifhZ

²¹ Aèhc Ic bhWi EC fhghUS Shæj ZhWhBSm
 MmSh bhd-LhbhWh dhHLid, Bbhb ghejWc XjA
 BLhbhcc MiçhD dmZiE Efdm BShc gifhZ chGdhz
 bjLh WZiD EC gifhZ chGhc gjFjb UiLdhz ²² bhZjUm
 bjLhcm MmdhGhW gjFjb UiLdh, B gjFjb bhYiF
 DgjUh Hjiic Ccic XjA ZhSLmddm BSh gÀdSh Zh-
 WhBdh, ShBW ALdh gjcc WhSiz ²³ UhW Hjiic
 EgiLhbhFc XjA AgdiAZm ZhSLmddcm fhBÌ Fedhz
 gFd MhSc ASc Fhb Ac Wffh ZhWhWic FhbE ShBW
 CîhU ALdhz Uhbi didmW FhXec bhMm did, Zh-
 BJHWi, dh d fJShUi Wffh Fchc FhbEE ShBW CîhU
 ALdhz

²⁴ CKh Fci fXh FjcZhWi ThFi XhEA CWSif bW fhSf Sif Sdh fjWh EC DZhUS-GhWh ZhWhBSm dhHLmz B bhX EBd DZhUS-GhWhc Sjdhc bhXmz

²⁵ ZWi BLchBdc bhWjf HWiZhc Zhdh Mmchcm HWh EBLid, Shchc HmL ThFi DF-f bW DF AMhc fhSf XKÍBc Sdh cjXh XhEA HmLid, B bhX EBd DZhUS-GhWhc bhXmz ²⁶ HWh EBLm ECdh bhWjf, bhWi Zif ZcL Zh Dc KhBSm Zmfi ZDEfAdh, gC LD dhG SiW AMhc fheo XhKf bhWfm DZhUS-GhWhc bhXm bhTh XiLj AVh Sdh Fci cjXh UiLidz ²⁷ B cjXh ThFi DF-f bW cjXh UiA DZhUS-GhWh Ac XcUhc GjOic Sdc ajch ZhWhBd EBLidz DF DF ajchS DF bW cjXh UiA bjO DF fHj ajch ZhWhBd EBLmz ²⁸ Ac ZhFi DF AMhc fhSf XKÍBc Sdh cjXh GjOic Feh, GjOic bhTh XmKhWi, Ac ZhÛizhc Shc ZhWhWiS dhHLmz

²⁹ CKh Fci fXh FjcZhWi ThFi dièhc XiSd Udh EBLid fÍBc bW UIB AMhc KhBcf Sdhz ³⁰ BSh UiA bidW-Shæjc UlAcc ajch, XiSdc FjcZhWi GhWh, Dc XiSdc Mhdi Ac FjcZhWi GhWhc gÀd KiM ZhWhBd EBLm, ³¹ CPhWc KhBcE Hhdhc ajch, HmBOc ajch, Shæj Ac CPhWc KhBcE Hhdhc GjOic XmcmH ZhWhBd EBLmz

39

XcVhW Bbhbc XZiï dmZhL

¹ Aèhc Icc XhF MhHhS BbhbcSi Fhbc fbD YiÛhc dhHi, Shch dhD, ZhBJHWi Ac did fjShUi fjÛc Fci dmZhL ZhWhBdhz bhZjUm bjLhcm Mmdh gjFjb UiLdh, DÀmcm EC dhGhW Fci Bbhbc ghcjWc dhHi XZiï dmZhL ZhWhBdhz

² EC CîhU FhciHc EFdm did, ZhBJHWi, dhd fjSh, Uhbi didmW FhXe Ac fjWhUi XcVhW Bbhbc DYcW ZhWhBdhz ³ fjWh XiOhBA XhS ZhWhBA, fjShc dhGhW fjWhc Shc SiAc Fcdhz ZhUm did, ZhBJHWi, dhd fjSh, Uhbi didmW FhXe Ac fjWhc Shc DFdHm bidhBA FhXe ZhWhBdhz ⁴ DYcWc FhÛc Hhdh Mjeh UiZhc dhHi UlGhW XOôoi ZhWhBA, DYcWc CXcc FjWhS dhHhBdhz ⁵ DYcWc dHm Mjeh dhHhBd XmOc CXcc ZmdOGhWE DYcWc fjShUi ZhWhBdhz Shch did, ZhBJHWi, dhd fjSh, Uhbi didmW FhXe Ac fjWhc Shc UiA PiF DYcWc Wb-jWhD ZhWhBdhz bhZjUm bjLhcm Mmdh gjFjb UiLdh, DÀmcm EC dhGhW Fci gÀdsh ZhWhBd EBdz

⁶ ZhUm Shch UlBOh AFiF Xhíc FhOia, Dc CXcm fjWhc MhMBc ZEABdhz gjWhc EFdm Uhbi Xhíc GjUiA Mmdh fid ZhWhBW, ECdh Xhíc GjUiA BLchBdc XjApØc Whb dmGdhz ⁷ Ac EC UlBE Xhíc fjWhc MhMBcc bhMm dhHhBA, DYcWc FhÛc YiShc dHm ZhÛidhz BLchBdc XjApØc ZhD bhZjUc WMc chGhc dhHi Bdh Fcdhz bhZjUm bjLhcm Mmdh gjFjb UiLdh, ECdh gFdSh Fch EBdz

⁸ ZhUm DYcWc dhGhW ahdh CîhU UcMicmUi did, ZhBJHWi, dhd fjSh, Uhbi didmW FhXe Ac fjWhUi ZjFc CXcc Tdi ZhWhBd EBdz ⁹ BOh EBd dhæhD AVh AS, Xhfm AVh AS, KhBcFjWi UlB ahBÕ Fch FhXez ¹⁰ Dc CXcm Shch KhBc ghBc Fci Uhbi Xhíc dhHhBdhz XDdh ghciS BAFjS, XiS Ac XhÛh bWi; ¹¹ ULLch ghciS dhd bWi, did bWi Ac gich; ¹² SiW Wæc ghciS YicjM, HjbmU Ac XÐchH bWiz ¹³ KhBc Wæc ghBcE XjGchM, ZpUlcôm Ac fjcjM bWiz B Xhíc EFd fjWhc MhMBcc CXcm dhHhBd

EBdz ¹⁴ BLchBdc ZhcE XjAc dhHi ZhcEOh XhÍc
dhHhBdhz BSh DFE XhÍcE DF DF XjAc Whb GjUiA
dmGh EBD, Mmdh GjUiA fid ZhWhBd EDz

¹⁵ ZjFc CXcc Tdic dhHi GhOi fjWhUi cfic dhGhW
XmKhBA UlFLh KmBW ZhWhBdhz ¹⁶ Ac fjWhc
UlGhW MhMBc Ac UlBOh Feh ZhWhBA, ZjFc EC
Tdic CXcc UlB FjWhS dhHhBdhz ¹⁷ Ac KmBW Ul-
BEHmLh UlBE Fehc dHm AOFhBdhz ¹⁸ UlBE FhÛc
DYcWc LhbWc YiShS fjWhc MhMBcc dHm KmBWc
DF bhTh ZhÛidhz ¹⁹ AcE UlBOh fjWhc Feh ZhWhBA
ZjFc CXcc Tdic UlB FjWhS dhHhBdhz B UlBEOh
DYcWc dHm ZjFc Tdic Sdm cBdz ²⁰ ZhUm AcE
UlBOh fjWhc Feh ZhWhBA, DYcWc FhÛc XOôoic
fB SdmUi, XmOc CXcc ZmdOc CXcc fidhBc FhLhS
dhHhB Uidhz ²¹ Ac ZjFjc CXcc Tdic Sdc Fehc dHm
XmOc CXcc WFfh Fch ZmdOc Feh ZhÛidh, Ac EC
TdiD deh-Keh Wh Fchc dhHi Sdc Fehc dHm did
fjShUi ZhÛi Uidh, Mmdh bhZjUm bjLhcm gjFjb
FcLdhz

²² ZhUm Shch DYcWc Sdc AdGmèh did
cJHc fjShUi ZhBW Fcdh, ²³ Ac bhTh ghchBZhc
Zhdh Hdhc YhF LieS Wh Fci Dc KhBcE Hhdh
XOôoi UiA Ue Fci ZhBW Fcdh, Hdhc EC YhF
chGdh bhM ZchZcz ²⁴ did, ZhBJHWi, dhc cJHc
XmKhBd fjShUi AWjAc Ydc dhGhW ZhWhBdhz
ZhWhBA EHjBWcm AdGmèhc Sdc bjeic KhBcEZhD
dhHhBdhz ²⁵ ZhUm GhOi fjWhc IjJHjc ZhWhBA
EC AWjAcc YhFm YhFm dhHhBdh, ²⁶ Aîh Sdc
bjeiS DFHj Fci AWjAc Ac DFHj Fci IjJHjc dhHhBd
EBdz DZHUSi Fhbc Zhdh Bbhb LhZm EC AdGmèh
YiÛishz bhZjUm bjLhcm Mmdh gjFjb UiLdh,
DÀmcm ECdh Fch EBdz

27 ZhUm Shch ghcjW Ac ShW XjApØc dhHi Uhbi didmW fjShUi XhBÕhzi ZhWhBdhz 28 bhThe XhCHEi Ac SFiHjBWE Uhbi didmW FhXeUi ZhWhBdh, Ac Bbhbc ghY-XmÖE ZhWhBdh EC FhXeUiz 29 FbcE ZhÛhc dhHi DGhW FhXe ZhWhBdh, Uhbi didmW FhXe, did, ZhBJHWi Ac dhhd fjShUi Wffh Fci ZhWhBdhz bhZjUm bjLhcm Mmdh gjFjb UiLdh, DÀmcm ECdh Fch EBdz

30 Ac XhCHEic LhbWm dhHhWic dhHi, GhOi fjWhc XhSUi DGhW XZiï ShM SiAc Fcdhz fidc CXcm Mmdh GjUiA dmGh ED, EC XhSc CXcm Edh GjUiA dmGdh, 'bhZjUc Whbm XZiïz' 31 bhZjUm bjLhcm Mmdh gjFjb UiLdh, EC gjFjb bhYiFC B XhScm did fjShUi XhCHEic LhbWm ZhÛi Uidhz

bjLhD (A:) gFdSh fbMiA Widh

32 EC dhGhW bidW-Shæj fg Aèhc Icc gÀd Fhb-FhM fmf EBdz bhZjUm bjLhcm Mmdh gjFjb UiLdh, ZWi BLchBdm DÀmcm EC dhGhW gFdSh Fcdhz 33 ZhUm Shch Aèhc Icc dhHi ZhWhBd gÀdsh bjLhc FhLhS dBA ABdhz Shch AWdh:

bidW-Shæj, Shæjc gFd bhd-LhbhWh, gjF, YtmBb, ZhÍi, GjOi, GjOic Sdc ajch;

34 dhhd cj Fch bmehc Khbehc LhWi, Yk'c Khbehc LhWi, GhL XhF MhHhcm Zmeh UmEAc XcUh;

35 fhghUS fÛLF, fÛLF ZBA WmEAc ZmÛh, fÛLFc LhWi;

36 OmZjd, OmZjdc gFd KiM, bhZjUc Whbc XZiï cjOi;

37 GhOi fjWhc KmchHUhWi, Dc dHc gFd KiM, MhdhWic Smd;

38 fjWhc AHc-GjfZD MhdhWi GhWh, GmdhYSic Smd, GjfZDAdh AHc, Aèhc Icc UlAcc XcUh;

39 XiSdc FjcZhWi GhWh, XiSdc Mhdi, FjcZhWi GhWh ZBA WmEAc ZmÙh, FjcZhWi GhWhc gÀd bhd-LhbhWh, EMjc Hhbdh Ac Dc Sdc KFi-GhO;

40 CPhWc XcUhBW, GjOiW, GjOic Sdc ajch, CPhWE ghbhWic HmBOc XcUh, CPhWc Xm-cmH Ac Uei;

DF FThD, bidW-Shæj fg Aèhc Icc gÀd bhd-LhbhWh;

41 Ac XhF MhHhS BbhbSi Fhbc dhHi Bbhb ghcjWc XZiİ dmZhL, Ac ShW XjApØcE BbhbSic dmZhLz

42 bhZjUm bjLhcm Mmdh gjFjb UiLdh, EC dhGhW ZWi BLchBd EFdm gFd Fhb Fcdhz ⁴³ gmfm bjLhD BSh gFdSh UmGiA ZjMdh, bhZjUm Mmdh gjFjb UiLdh, EC dhGhWC Fch EBLmz DcdhHi ShBW gFd ZWi BLchBdcm ULA Uidhz

40

Aèhc Iccm Gheh Fch

¹ bhZjUm bjLh WZicm FBdh, ² “Sjbi ZLcc XDdh KhÙc XDdh ShciGE bidW-Shæj fg Abhc Iccm Gheh FciEz ³ Icc aiScm fhghUS fÛlFc m ghchBA, bhMm XcUh OhWhBA fÛlFc m AEeo TBEz ⁴ OmZjdc mE aiScm ghchBA, Dc CXcc KiM EFd ghMhBEz ZhUm KmchHUhWi aiScm AWiA Shc dmb EFd MhdhB UiEz ⁵ fjWhUi ZhWhBd AHc-GjfZD MhdhWi GhWh fhghUS fÛlFc LhbWm TBE, TBA Abhc Icc UlAcc XcUh dhHhBEz ⁶ Abhc Icc bidW-Shæjc UlAcc

LhbWm MhdhBd FjcZhWi GhWh TBEz ⁷ FjcZhWi GhWh Ac bidW-Shæjc bhMGhWE EMjc Hhbdh XhWiUi aciA TBEz ⁸ ZhUm CPhWc KhBcE HhdhZhD XcUh OhWhBE, Ac CPhWc HmBOEE XcUh dhHhBEz

⁹ “ZhUm Sjbi GmdhYSic Smd UiA Abhc Ic Ac Abhc Icc gFd bhd-LhbhWhcm XZiï FciEz SmC BSh gFdSh bgh XhF-XZiï EBZz ¹⁰ Ac MhdhBd FjcZhWi GhWhc CXcmE GmdhYSic Smd UiA XZiï FciEz FjcZhWi GhWhc gFd bhd-LhbhWhcmE XZiï FciEz SmC B FjcZhWi GhWh bgh-XZiï KiM EBZz ¹¹ EMj Fchc Hhbdh Ac Dc Sdc KFi-GhOcmE GmdhYSic Smd UiA XZiï FciEz

¹² “ZhUm ghcjW Ac Shc XjApWcm bidW-Shæjc UlAcc LhbWm AWiA XhWiUi WhEAB UiEz ¹³ WhEAWic ZhUm ghcjWcm XhF-XZiï dmZhL EFd YiÛhBE, Ac Abhc Bbhb EAc dhHi Shcm XZiï Smd dhHhBA GmdhYSi UiA XZiï FciEz ¹⁴ Shc XjApØcm AWiA BbhbSic XhBÕhZi YiÛhBEz ¹⁵ Shchc ZhYcm Mmdh XZiï SmdUi BbhbSi Fhbc GmdhYSi UiL, ShchcmE ECdh GmdhYSi UiEz MhSm ShchE Abhc BbhbSi Fhb FcSh XhçpWz B GmdhYSic bhMUi BbhbSic Mm WiEb Khdj EBZ, BSh EAcifc Xc EAcif Vci Khdj cBZz”

¹⁶ bhZjUc gjFjb bhYiF bjLhD BSh gFdSh Fedhz ¹⁷ UlLch ZLcc XDdh KhÛc XDdh ShciGE Aèhc Ic Gheh Fch EBdz ¹⁸ bjLhD B Ic Gheh Fcdh, XDdh Dc GjOic Sdc ajch ZEABdh, GjOiW CZh Fedh, Zmehc YtmBb dhHhBdh, YtmBbc aiScmUi Zhíi Uidhz ¹⁹ bhZjUc gjFjb bhYiF ShBW LhHdc cjbh UiA Icc XDdh LhWi Uidh, Dc CXcm Uidh AcE UlBOh LhWiz

²⁰ ZhUm XZiï fhghUS-Xhíc AWiA fÛlFc aiScm

ghchBdhz fÛlF ZBA WmEAc ZmÛh dhHhBdh, fÛlFc
 CXcc LhWiE dhHhBdhz ²¹ Ac fÛlFcm WiA Aèhc Icc
 aiScm ghchBdhz ghchBA XcUh OhWhBA fÛlFcm
 AEeo chGdhz Mmdh bhZjUm bjLhcm gjFjb UiLdhz

²² fÛlFc EC XcUhc Zhcm Cíc HhdhZhD, bidW-
 Shæjc bhMm XZiï cjOic OmZjd chGdhz ²³ OmZjdc
 CXcm bhZjUc Whbc XZiï cjOi ghMhBA TBdh,
 Mmdh bhZjUm bjLhcm gjFjb UiLdhz

²⁴ OmZjdc LhbWm Shæjc UÀiw HhdhS Km-
 chHUhWi TBdhz ²⁵ ZhUm bhZjUc LhbWm dmb
 HjBW MhdhBdh, Mmdh bhZjUm bjLhcm gjFjb
 UiLdhz

²⁶ bidW-Shæjc bhMGhWc XcUhc LhbWm
 fjWhUi ZhWhBd AHc-GjfZD MhdhWi GhWh
 TBdhz ²⁷ EGhWc CXcm GjfZDadh AHc MhdhBdh,
 Mmdh bhZjUm bjLhcm gjFjb UiLdhz ²⁸ ZhUm
 bjLhD UlAcc XcUh OhWhBdhz

²⁹ ShBW Aèhc Icc bidW-Shæjc UlAcc FhÛhs Mhd-
 hBd FjcZhWi GhWh TBdhz TBA Dc CXcm MhdhBd
 Xfj FjcZhWi Ac Yfd FjcZhWi Uidh, Mmdh bhZjUm
 bjLhcm gjFjb UiLdhz

³⁰ ZhUm bidW-Shæj Ac FjcZhWi GhWhc bh-
 MGhWE EMjc Hhbdh TBdh, TBA EMjc XhWi aciA
 Uidhz ³¹ EC XhWi UiA bjLh, ghcjW Ac ghcjWc
 XjApØm EMj FcShz ³² bhZjUc gjFjb bhYiF Shch
 bidW-Shæjs ghbhWic AHm, Zh FjcZhWi GhWhc
 FhÛhs MhEAc AHm EMj FcShz ³³ ZhUm bjLhD
 Aèhc Ic Ac FjcZhWi GhWhc KhBcEzHD XcUh
 OhWhBA CPhW ZhWhBdhz CPhWc HmBOc XcUh
 dhHhBdhz EC dhGhW bjLhD ShW gFd Fhb fmf
 Fcdhz

Aèhc bgibh MhBc EBd

³⁴ Fhb fmf FciA ghcdm, HhBZi bmIc KhFh ABA
 EC bidW-Shæjcm Hjciddid, bhZjUc bgibh Ac FjUcSm
 Aîh Ic aciHmdz ³⁵ DcdhHi bjLh Ac bidW-Shæjs
 ghbhBSh Xhcdh Wh, FhcW Dc CXcm gC bmIc KhFh
 ALid, Ac bhZjUc FjUcSi bgibhD Aîh Ic aciHmLidz

³⁶ ZWi BLchBdc EC Aîh LYcc bhMm, Aèhc Icc
 CXcm ThFi bmIc KhFh gciA ghcdm Shch AOiA
 cEAWh UiShz ³⁷ EBdm bmIc KhFh CXcm ThFi Wh
 gch XcMØ Shch ZhcBSh Wh, EC KhFh gchc dhHi
 Zhc KhBShz ³⁸ FhcW ZWi BLchBdc EC Aîh LYcc
 bhMmC, UiWc Zhdh Shchc KGjc LhbWm Aèhc Icc
 CXcm bmIc KhFh cBS, Ac chBSc Zhdh cBS AHjBWc
 KhFh|

Sylheti New Testament (Sylo)

Sylheti: Sylheti New Testament (Sylo) New Testament+

copyright © 2014 Ahle Kitab Society

Language: (Sylheti)

Contributor: The Seed Company

script: Sylheti-nagri Legacy

All rights reserved.

2020-11-30

PDF generated using Haiola and XeLaTeX on 4 Mar 2023 from source files
dated 29 Jan 2022

b09efc2b-554a-59ba-ad09-a385ff8f9a86